

**Basics of Christianity**  
**San Tan International School of Ministry**

**REV. ROBERT BROWN**

**INTRODUCTION**

Welcome to San Tan International School Ministry. We are a faith walking, Spirit filled, bible believing ministry that God has raised up to preach the Gospel into the entire world. He has commissioned us to bring sight to the blind, healing to the sick, and deliverance to the captive. Just as in day of old God has birth a vision of great revival in this area in the hearts of believers.

God saved me and set me free from drugs, then spoke to me and gave me a great commission, to go and prepare his Bride. Just the fact that you are reading this means that our paths have crossed. God has ordained that you should read this bible study.

Now that you have accepted Jesus Christ as your Savior, I want to welcome you to the body of Christ. Jesus has brought you out of darkness and into his marvelous light. This bible study is to help you learn about God and how to follow him, to help you learn his ways. God spoke to me in the summer of 2001 and said to write a bible study for new believers, so they can get rooted and grounded in his Word. He said to keep it basic so that the people can understand it. What is contained in this small portion of the study is just the beginning because there will be much added to it in the future.

This study does not contain all the knowledge of the Word of God; it only scratches the surface. There are many riches of wisdom and knowledge in God's Word, and I believe that if you will study this bible study fervently, it will birth a hunger in your heart for God's presence and his Word that you have never experienced.

Dig deep into the Word and grow into a strong warrior for God. We are told to study to show ourselves approved unto God. The Word of God

is your very life. Jesus said that his Words are Spirit, and the Spirit brings life. As you read and study, pray that the Spirit of God will give you revelation. I want to thank all that contributed to the completion of this bible study, and all that have stood faithfully with this ministry, and supported it with their prayers. I especially want to thank my beautiful wife Charlotte who spent many hours putting this study together for you, and I pray it will help expand your knowledge in the things of God.

May God Bless and Keep You

Rev. Robert Brown

## **Table of Contents**

### **Section #1**

**1, Introduction**

**page 4**

**2, Catch the Vision**

**page 16**

**3, Salvation**

**page 31**

**4, Holy Ghost**

**page 44**

**5, Faith**

**page 64**

**6, Prayer**

**page 81**

**7, Sanctification**

**page 94**

**8, Righteousness**

**page 101**

**9, Holiness**

**page 109**

**10, Godliness**

**page 115**

### **Section #2**

**11, Growing in Christ**

**page 122**

**12, Temptation, Persecution  
and Trials**

**page 132**

**13, Total Obedience**

**page 146**

### **Section #3**

**14, Eternal Godhead-God the  
Father**

**page 156**

**15, God the Son-Jesus Christ**

**page 173**

**16, Archangel-Seraphim**

**Angels**

**page 189**

**17, Cherubim Angels**

**page 199**

### **Section # 4**

**18, Fallen Angels-Lucifer**

**page 205**

**19, Fallen Angels-Evil Powers**

**page 221**

**20, Fallen Man-Redeemed**

**Man**

**page 233**

**21, Rewards and Position on  
the Earth**

**page 254**

### **Section # 5**

**22, The Catching Away**

**page 268**

**23, The Second Return of  
Christ**

**page 287**

**24, New Heaven and New  
Earth**

**page 292**

**25, Hell**

**page 295**

**SECTION # 1**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 1**  
**INTRODUCTION TO BIBLE STUDY**

Welcome to the San Tan International School of Ministry Discipleship Bible Study. As you progress through this study you will acquire a thorough knowledge of the word of God. But by no means does this study contain all the wisdom and knowledge contained in the Bible. God word is so rich in knowledge that we could only began to scratch the surface.

***Romans 11:33-34 (O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out! For who hath known the mind of the Lord? Or who hath been his counsellor?)***

How can we who are flesh and blood by able to understand a God who created all things. We will never be able to fully understand the mind of God, but God has revealed a small part of himself to us in his word. And if we will seek to know God, we will learn about him. Jesus tells us in,

***Matthew 7:7-8 (Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be open unto you: For everyone that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be open.)***

If we seek after knowledge and wisdom we shall receive from our heavenly father.

***James 1:5 (If any man lack wisdom, let him ask God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.)***

If you set your heart to know God's word and be diligent in your studies, God will open his word to you so you can receive revelation.

Solomon who was considered the wisest man every live, (besides Jesus Christ), when given the choice between riches and knowledge he chose knowledge and wisdom.

*2 Chronicles 1:7-12 (In that night did God appear unto Solomon, and said unto him, ask what I shall give thee. And Solomon said unto God, give me now wisdom and knowledge, that I may go out and come in before this people, that is so great? And God said to Solomon, because this was in thine heart, and thou hast not asked riches, wealth, or honor, nor the life of thine enemies, neither yet hast asked long life; but hast asked wisdom and knowledge for thyself, that thou mayest judge my people, over whom I have made thee king: Wisdom and knowledge is granted unto thee.)*

**(Wisdom and knowledge was granted unto him because he desired it to benefit others.)**

If you will hunger and thirst after knowledge and wisdom so you can minister to others God will enrich you with wisdom that only comes from him! And that is the purpose of this study to prepare you to minister to others. So set your heart and seek after understanding and you will receive.

*Proverb 2:2-6 (So that thou incline thine ear unto wisdom, and apply thine heart to understand; Yea, if thou criest after knowledge, and liftest up thy voice for understanding; If thou seekest her as silver, and searchest for her as for hid treasures; Then shalt thou understand the fear of the Lord and find the knowledge of God. For the Lord giveth wisdom: out of his mouth cometh knowledge and understanding.)*

God wants us to have knowledge of this word. We are to study and equip ourselves so we will be prepared to be used for God's glory. We are told in,

*2 Timothy 2:15 (Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.)*

God does not want us to be ignorant of his ways. We are to study to learn the mind of Christ. Only then can we rightly divide the word of truth. Only then can we minister life to those around us.

Just before Jesus finished his earthly ministry, (his ministry continues still in his people) and went back to the Father. He gave the great commission.

*Matthew 28:19-20 (Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:*

*Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.)*

In, *Mark 16:15 (Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.)*

This is what we have been called to do to prepare ourselves by studying and then in return teach others. Making disciples of others.

**(God has very clearly shows us in the word that many are in deception and destroyed because of their lack of knowledge.)**

*Hosea 4:6 (My people are destroyed for a lack of Knowledge:)*

God has specifically positioned some in the body of Christ for the purpose to teach the word to others. He tells us in,

*Ephesians 4:11 (And he gave some, apostles, and some, prophets, and some, pastors and teachers;)*

*1 Corinthians 12: 28 (And God has set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers,)*

God picks men and women to teach others and to gives them revelation of his word, it said in,

*Jeremiah 3:15 (And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.)*

They are to reveal the heart of God to the people. God wants man to learn of him, to learn his ways, his heart and vision, his purpose for man. God through the ages has taken and given revelation of his word to man. He instructed them to write it down and preserved it. We find examples of this in the book of,

*Daniel 12:4 (But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end:*

*Revelation 22:10 (And he said unto me, seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand.)*

God has always kept his word preserved; it is our lifeline to him. Now the word may seem foolishness to some, it even says in,

***1 Corinthians 1:18 (For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness;)***

However, it is the other way around, man is the one who is foolish, God is not. Even the wisest among us are foolish in the eyes of God. There is no way we could ever understand God with are infinite carnal minds. God brings his word down to us in a way we can understand. This is explained in

***Isaiah 55; 8-13 (For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD.***

***For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts.***

***For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater:***

***So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.***

***For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands.***

***Instead of the thorn shall come up the fir tree, and instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle tree: and it shall be to the lord for a name, for a name, for an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off.)***

It is Gods will for us to know him, because to know him means to love him. Knowing his love give us a greater desire to please him. He reveals him-self to us in a way we can understand, even as rain that comes down and waters the earth and causes new growth to come up. And even as rain causes new growth, God's word will flourish in your lives and hearts and produce good results. Not thorn and briar but the fir tree and myrtle tree, it will not produce that which is bad but that which is good. We shall have joy and peace, happiness, singing and rejoicing, not sorrow and confusion but love. It is just not vain words of ink wrote on paper, the word of God is the very life of God, flowing into us, giving us new life, his word is the very life of God being given to his people, Jesus said in,

*John 6:63 (It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.)*

The word of God is Spirit, so the carnal mind cannot receive it. The fleshly mind cannot truly grasp the meaning of God's word. This is what Jesus meant when he said,

*Mark 8:18 (Having eyes, see ye not? And having ears, hear ye not?)*

The word is only truly revealed to us by the Spirit of "The Living God".

*1 Corinthians 2:12-14 (Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. <sup>13</sup>Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. <sup>14</sup>But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.)*

**(You cannot truly receive revelation of Gods word, outside of having a relation with him.)**

But as you enter in a relation with God the Spirit of God comes to live in you, and the Spirit of God will begin to teach you the true meaning of the word. Without the Spirit of God living in you the word may not even make sense to you. It may even seem to contradict itself. But as you begin to follow Christ and study the word will come alive. God takes his word and as you study it, it becomes a part of you. It is even as leaven just a little will enlarge and affect you in every area of your life. We are told in,

*James 1: 21b (receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.)*

This word will save you if you will receive it.

**(It will keep you in the time of troubles, temptations and trials.)**

The word of God become a part of you. It will be brought to your remembrance when you need it by the Holy Spirit. God takes his word



and by his Spirit he writes it in our hearts. You will draw strength from it in time of need. David said in,

***Psalm 119:11 (Thy word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against thee.)***

***1Corinthians 3:3 (Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.)***

As you study ask God to reveal his word to you, and to write his word in your heart by his Spirit, and he will. All down through the ages the enemy, Satan has tried to stop the word of God but without success. God has protected and preserved his word. And we should recognize how great of importance his word is to us. Shortly after the birth of the church, there had many converted and added to the church they were in the need of teaching so they could grow. But the apostles had been arrested and thrown into prison,

***Acts 5:19-20 (But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth, and said,***

***Go, stand and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life,)***

The preaching of the gospel is so important to God that he will open doors for you. He will make a way for you to preach his word because his gospel brings salvation to man.

**(Everything that has been written in the Bible is for the salvation of man.)**

There are no empty or vain words that God has spoken. It tells us in,

***2 Timothy 3:16-17 (All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:***

***That the man of God may be perfect, throughly furnished unto all good works.)***

What God has revealed to his servants, to put into this book, called the Holy Bible has been for the benefit of man, to save his soul from hell.

His word is the most precious thing in the world because his word is him. His word represents him, and he is a God of honor. God will always honor his word. If there is one lie in the Bible, then the whole Bible is worthless.

***Hebrews 6:18 (it was impossible for God to lie.)***

God said what he meant, and what God said he will do, his word will never fail. Jesus said in,

***Matthew 5: 18 (For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.)***

Everything that God has said will come to pass, just like he said it will. When everything is said and done God's word will still be standing.

***Matthew 24:35 (Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.)***

God's word has stood the test of time, and it will stand in the end, forever. It is described, as a rock, and that we should build our lives upon.

**(God's word is our solid foundation.)**

His word is power. Jesus spoke as a man of power and authority. One day they sent officers to arrest Jesus when they returned they answered and said,

***John 7:46 (Never man spake like this man.)***

When there was nothing in existence God spoke and all things were created, he took nothing and created everything. God's word has ability to change lives, to break the bondage of sin from off of lives. The word is described as,

***Jeremiah 23:29 (Is not my word like as a fire? Saith the Lord; and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces?)***

It will burn the chaff out of your life; it will break habits and strongholds that Satan may have in your life, and the lives of others. It has the ability to convict you and change you from the inside out.

God has entrusted to us his Word; there is nothing greater in the world than to be called to be minister the words of life. This is the reason you must be prepared and equipped. This is the purpose of this study to

prepare you, then to send you out to make follows of Christ also. First a person must be taught, then they can teach others. You must learn to,

***2 Timothy 2: 15c (rightly dividing the word of truth.)***

There is power in this word, and if used wrong it can do much damage in the lives of others. You must realize that you have power in your words, because the words you speak are the very words of God.

***Jeremiah 1:9 (Then the Lord put forth his hand, and touch my mouth. And the Lord said unto me, Behold, I have put my words in thy mouth.)***

You change lives with your words. As a vessel of God, he will flow through you to minister to others, to bring hope to the hopeless, faith to the faithless, peace to the troubled, joy to them in sorrow. You have the very life of God living in you; you produce life or death with the word you speak.

***Proverbs 18: 21(Death and life are in the power of the tongue:)***

You can heal the deepest wounds with the words you say. You can build up or tear down with your words. This is what God told Jeremiah also.

***Jeremiah 1: 10 (See, I have this day set thee over the nations and over the kingdoms, to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy, and to throw down, to build, and to plant.)***

You can destroy as well as heal with the words you speak. If you miss use the word you may do damage that may never be healed.

***Hebrews 4:12 (For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword.)***

We are told also in,

***2Timothy 2:24-25 (And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth;)***

Remember you are a life giver, the life of God flows from you to others. Let every thing you do be seasoned with grace.

God has given us the awesome responsibility the spread the word. To teach others the truth found in his word. In a world that is blinded to

the truth, the only way their eyes can be open is if someone can reach them with the gospel. This is explained in,

***Romans 10:14-15 (How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? And how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? And how shall they hear without a preacher. And how shall they preach, except they be sent.)***

God is still sending labourers into the fields to bring in the harvest.

***Matthew 9:37-38 (The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few; Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.)***

This is a big responsibility. To take the word to the ends of the earth. To fulfill this commission you must dedicate yourself to God completely, and also dedicate yourself to study. Be faithful in the things of God, for he who has called you is faithful.

***1 Corinthians 4:1-2 9 (Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God. Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.)***

Apply your heart to studying God's word, be faithful, and the word will begin to open up to you with revelation directly from the mind of God.

God's word has always been. John the beloved tells us in,

***John 1:1-3 (In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.)***

Now we know the scripture is talking about Jesus here. He is even referred to as the word. Nothing was created without the word being spoken by Jesus, by God. ***(When God created all things he did it by the power of his word.)*** And all things are held together, kept in check, the powers of Satan are kept at bay by the power of God's word. Nothing ever happened in this world until it is spoken into existence by the power of his word. And this power has been placed in your mouth.

***Mark 11:23 (For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and***

***shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith.)***

The words that God has spoken are able to bring life if we will obey them, but if we don't they will bring death. This is well illustrated in the story of Adam and Eve, they were told not to eat from the Tree of the knowledge of good and evil, but they did!

Everything that God has spoken is for the benefit of man to give him life. His commandment he gave Adam was for his own good, to keep him alive in his presence and by breaking it he brought death on himself and on all man. Because he broke God's commandment he was driven from God's presence.

***Romans 5:12 (Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:)***

God placed Adam in the garden and gave him specific instructions on how to live. Just like he has told all of us in his word.

The reason why God has preserved his word, is because God loves man. He has bestowed all of his affection upon man. He has told us what we can and cannot do in his word. Revealing to us what brings life or death. He has taught us how to have life, how to live and how to be blessed. After he had delivered his people out of Egypt bondage he gave the laws to Moses to deliver unto the people. He told them in,

***Deuteronomy 6:17-18 (Ye shall diligently keep the commandments of the Lord your God, and his testimonies, and his statutes, which he hath commanded thee. And thou shalt do that which is right and good in the sight of the Lord: that it may be well with thee, and that thou mayest go in and possess the good land which the Lord swore unto thy fathers,)***

Moses taught the people what had to be done to be able to go in and obtain the promises of God. God has always expressed the importance of doing things his way. He told Joshua in,

***Joshua 1:7-8 (Only be thou strong and very courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the law, which Moses my servant commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left,***

*that thou mayest prosper whithersoever thou goest. This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success.)*

**(Only by doing things his way can we be successful.)**

All down through the books of the bible, God has used men and women to tell the people his will. To speak his word, to give instruction in righteousness, to warn and correct but also to encourage and heal. God is still using people for his purpose. God is still speaking into the heart of his servants his will for the people.

*Hebrews 1:1-2 (God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets; Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son,)*

We have been called to be the disciples of Jesus Christ and to make disciples of Jesus, of others. When Jesus began his earthly minister, he gathered a group of men and told them,

*Matthew 4:19 (Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.)*

Jesus took and taught them then sent them out to teach other. We are his representatives in the world today.

*2 Corinthians 5:20 (Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.)*

We stand in the place of Jesus with the authority of God backing us, to make in difference in the world by touching the lives of others with the gospel of Jesus Christ.

Jesus was a preacher and a teacher. Any time he came across doubt and unbelief he would teach the people. People of this world are blinded to the truth because they have no knowledge of the truth. It is our job to open their eyes to the truth, by the truth.

**(And that is the whole purpose of this study. To teach you and prepare you to be able ministers of the gospel.)** To go out and preach and teach,

*Acts 26:18 (To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me. (Jesus Christ).*

**SECTION # 1**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 2**  
***CATCH THE VISION***

I remember when I was a boy in school; one of the things that the teachers would emphasize was, what do you want to do with your life? I believe it is of great importance that we should encourage our young people to begin to plan what they want to do with their lives, at an early age. To have a dream, to catch a vision of what they want to do with their lives. Most parents and teachers know the importance of setting goals in life. We need to have dreams, goals, and a vision to strive for. When I was a young man, I use to have a vision of getting a good job. Meeting a pretty girl, getting married, having children, and settling down to raise a family. Well by the time I was 18 I was married and already had one child. Now after 43 year of marriage I have a good job. Have 3 grown children, 11 grandchildren and 4 greatgrandchildren. The vision I had as a child has come to pass. I believe the vision for my life was inspired by God.

***Proverbs 16:9 (A man's heart deviseth his way: but the LORD directeth his steps.)***

The vision I caught as a child has carried me through some hard times. There have been some medical and financial problems, but I never lost sight of the vision. We need to have a vision of what we want to accomplish with our lives. It will give us the ambition we need to carry us through the hard times. If a person does not have a vision for their lives they have no purpose in life. Life becomes dull and without meaning. Without a plan or vision in a person's life, many times they will reach a point of despair in their lives. This is why many who has broken dreams, goals, plans, visions for their lives comes to utter depression.

**For a person to ever accomplish anything with their lives they must have a vision.**

Any time you set out to do something you need to have a vision in your mind of how to complete it from start to finish. When a construction company begins to build a house, they have a blueprint. It shows them



every phase of the construction from start to finish. They will not even start to build until they have the blueprint. This principle applies not only to the natural but also to the spiritual. Now in the spiritual we may not be able to see our lives from start to finish. But God will give us a vision of our lives and his calling on us.

I remember when I was a child, I had a vision of being a preacher. And now many years later I am a preacher of the gospel of Jesus Christ.

Jesus knew the importance of having a vision. And seeing it from beginning to end. I call this short term and long term, and eternal vision. We will talk about the difference between the three later in the lesson. Jesus illustrated the importance of having a vision of the present and the future when he taught the people in,

***Luke 14:28 (For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it?)***

What Jesus did is he took a natural truth to illustrate a spiritual truth. Now in the natural it is clear we should consider the cost. Anytime we go to do anything we must know that there will be unforeseen expenses, hardships. And we should take this into consideration. We should sit down and weigh out everything from start to finish. To see if we will be able to finish what we start.

**This is one of the tricks of the Devil, is to blind people to the finished results of their actions.**

Many think that their actions will only affect themselves. But look at the one sin of Adam how it all affected all of man.

***Galatians 6:7 (whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.)***

Your actions will always affect those around you. Satan does not show you the long-term effect of your actions, but only the short-term pleasures of sin. You must weigh out your actions. This applies to our natural life and spiritual life. We must catch a vision of God's will for our lives. And follow after it with all our heart. God knows and you must realize that as you pursue the will of God for your life you will have trials, you will be tempted, persecuted, rejected, and despised. There will be hard times, and the enemy will often tempt you to take the easy way out,

**God's way is not always the easy way but it is the way that leads to the eternal life**

God has a plan for your life and a purpose. Catch the vision of Gods will for your life, then you will find contentment and peace. No matter where you are at in this life whether young or old, rich or poor began to pursue his will for your life with your whole heart. And watch as he begins to work in your behalf. God wants you vision-will to be fulfilled in your life more than you do because then it brings him glory! You can fulfill the vision he has given you. God is on your side,

God has given you a vision of what he knows you can be successful at. He knows your abilities because he gave them to you! Many times, Satan may try to sidetrack you, but Gods Spirit is constantly leading us back to God's plan for our lives, so we can fulfill his will for us.

*Romans 8:28 (And we know that all things work together for the good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.)*

When Jesus began his ministry, he had given up everything, all his glory and honor to be,

*Isaiah 53:3,7 (He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not.--He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth.)*

He who was a King who became a servant.

*Philippians 2:5-8(Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal to God: But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.)*

Now when Jesus was born, he was just like us. He had no memory of being in heaven; he had to be taught everything just like us. I believe that God himself taught Jesus. He showed him everything he would have

to suffer. God revealed to Jesus that he would suffer, but he also revealed to him the Glory he had and would have again. This is what Jesus said just before his crucifixion.

*John 17:4-5 (I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.*

*And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.)*

God had given Jesus a vision of the Glory he had, and what he was about to receive. Jesus knew that he was going to live a hard life and suffer and die on the cross. But God had given him a vision of the glory he would receive in the end. And Jesus knew that God was faithful and true!

When Jesus began his ministry, after being baptized in the river of Jordan by John the Baptist he was led into the wilderness by the Spirit of God to be tempted of the devil. One of the temptations that the devil used against him was to turn him away from Gods will for his life and take the easy way out. Satan offers him a way to obtain all that he had given up when he was born as a servant, to obtain all the glory and power without having to die on the cross. Let us read in the scriptures how Jesus reacted.

*Luke 4:5-8 (And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.*

Jesus refused to take the easy way but chose to suffer and die, because that was Gods will for him.

*Isaiah 53:10 (Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise him; he hath put him to grief.)*

**It is easier to turn aside to the flesh than to press on with Gods will for our lives.**

But you must realize that the easy path is the way to destruction.

*Proverbs 13:12 (There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death.)*

Satan always makes the easy path seem, so desirable. He presents a pretty picture; he will make the easy path seem to be the one to take. Satan will tempt you to take the easy way out, but God has a will for your life stay on the course he has for your life. Remember,

***Romans 6:23 (For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.)***

Catch a vision of his will for your life and follow it with all your heart. The only way to stand in the hard times is to have a vision of Gods will for your life in the present, and the future and through eternity.

Paul the apostle was one who suffered many things for Christ. But in everything that he suffered the vision that God gave him carried him through it all. God began to show Paul what he would suffer for him upon his conversion. This is illustrated in the scripture when God spoke to Ananias about Paul. Telling Ananias in,

***Acts 9:16 (For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my name's sake)***

God revealed to Paul that he would suffer for his namesake. But as you study the life of Paul you will also find he had a vision of Gods Glory, and his power.

***Romans 8:18 (For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.)***

Paul gave up everything to follow the vision that God gave him,  
***Philippians 3:7-8,10 (But what things were gain to me, those I count loss for Christ. Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ, That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death.)***

God gave him a vision of the work he had called him to. God showed Paul what he would suffer and gave him a clear vision of the work he wanted him to do. So, he could stand in the trials, and persecutions he would face.

**The Devil wants you to lose your vision, because if you lose sight of the vision for your life. You will lose your zeal; fervency, your drive, and your ambition to accomplish the work God has for you to do.**

*Proverbs 29:18 (Where there is no vision, the people perish.)*

Keep the vision anew in your spirit at all the time never lose sight of what God is going to use you to accomplish in his kingdom. And the Glory you will inherit for being faithful to God. The purpose of this lesson in the bible study; is for you to catch a vision of Gods will for your life and a vision of the impact that this study will have on your life. How the word of God will change your life. You will reap the benefits of studying God's word forever. Because Gods word endures for-ever and it will keep you when the enemy comes against you. Now it is easy to be zealous any time you start something new. The excitement and thrill of studying God's word learning of him and his ways. But when the fun and excitement turn into work and sacrifice, days turn into weeks and weeks turn into months. When the thrill and excitement leave, having a vision of the purpose of this study will keep you going when the going gets tough. There are four things to always remember as you go through this study.

**1, Purpose, As you study, catch a vision of the purpose of this study.** We have already discussed this in the first lesson but let us go over it again. The purpose of this bible study is to equip and prepare you to be able ministers of the gospel of Jesus Christ.

**2, Privilege, As you study catch a vision of the privilege you have been given.** What a privilege it is to be given the opportunity to learn the word of God. We live in a nation where we can study and express our faith openly without fear of retaliation. There are some nations that do not have such freedom. And as the coming of the Lord draws nigh, more and more restrictions will be applied to the open expression of religion.

Christ said that in the last days there would be more and more religious deception. When asked by the disciples what would be the sign of his coming and of the end of the world? He answered,

***Matthew 24: 4-5,11 (Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.)***

Paul tells us in,

***2 Timothy 3:13 (But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, being deceived.)***

So as more and more are deceived by false doctrine, true biblical teaching will become more and more scarce. When given the opportunity to study the uncompromised word of God. Take advantage of it, it says in,

***Amos 8:11-13 (Behold, the days come, saith the Lord God, that I will send a famine in the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of hearing the words of the Lord: And they shall wander from sea to sea, and from the north even to the east, they shall run to and fro to seek the word of the Lord, and shall not find it. In that day shall the fair virgins and young men faint for thirst.)***

God's word will get more and more scarce as people become more and more evil. In the last Decade man has had a knowledge explosion. Look at all that has been invented in the last 100 years. This was told to God's servant in,

***Daniel 12:4 (But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.)***

Not only was God telling Daniel that man's knowledge would increase in the natural but also, I believe in his word. God has given much more revelation, concerning his word. It has always been there but like I have stated before, God's thoughts and ways are so much higher than ours. I believe that we will never know all of the revelations contained in the bible. How-ever in these last days he is revealing his word to us in more depth. When Jesus walked the Earth he gave new revelation to his disciples. He told his disciples in,

***Mark 4:11 (Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God.)***

God wants his people not to be ignorant of his word. A person can be deceived through ignorance, or because of their lack of knowledge.

Knowledge is knowing something. Wisdom is applying it. Many before Christ desired to have the revelation he gave to the disciples.

***Luke 10:24 (For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.)***

God gives revelation of his word, as his people have need for it. This day and age we fight more demons and devils than ever before. The days just before the coming of Christ will be the worst and hardest times for his people. Therefore, he has opened his word to us and given new insight. The world cannot understand God's word, but he will give you revelation, if you ask him to.

***Matthew 11:25 (I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.)***

**3, Value,** As you study catch a vision of the value of learning God's word. In this world we live in there is much emphasis put on obtaining worldly wealth. Having a nice home to live in, new car, nice clothes. And yet all these things someday will be gone. Jesus himself said,

***Matthew 6:19-21 (Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.)***

If you were to compare something that would last forever to something that will last a short time. There would be no comparison. The eternal is of more value, then the temporal. The wise thing to do would be to pick the eternal. What you learn in this bible study will last you forever. This is true riches, the knowledge and wisdom of God's word, not the things of this world that someday will perish. What you will learn in this study is priceless. And the devil cannot take it away from you. As you study, pray that God will give you wisdom of his word so you can understand it and that the word will fall on good ground.

***Matthew 13: 23 (But he that receive seed (the word) into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it;)***

The greater knowledge you have of the word, the more ability and influence you will have to convert others to Christ. And that's the true riches of Gods kingdom winning souls to Christ and laying up rewards in heaven.

**4, Significance's**, As you study catch a vision of the significance of studying Gods word. As you study the word and learn of God. About his power and might, love and compassion, and his faithfulness. You will become strong soldiers. The way you become strong is by your faith growing. You must realize everything you obtain from God is by faith. We were saved by faith,

***Ephesians 2:8 (For by grace are ye saved through faith;)***

We walk by faith.

***2 Corinthians 5:7 (For we walk by faith, not by sight:)***

We live by faith.

***Galatians 3:11 (The just shall live by faith.)***

And we will inherit all things by faith.

***Acts 26:18b (and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.)***

And the way you obtain faith is by the word of God.

***Romans 10:17 (So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.)***

The stronger your faith becomes the stronger you will be. The word will equip you to be a might warrior for Christ. You will be able to use the word to combat the enemy. Jesus used the word to combat the enemy when he came against him in the wilderness. We have been given a might weapon, God's word. The more skilled you are with the sword the more damage you can do to the Devils kingdom. We are told in,

***1 John 3:8 (For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.)***

Now the works of the devil are sin, sickness, suffering,

***John 10:10 (The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy:)***

The very reason God has raised you up is so you, who are joint heirs with Christ, can go to war against Satan and his kingdom to tear it down.



The enemy has taken many into captivity, and we have been given the power to set them free to deliver them out of the captivity and the snares of the devil. Is this not the purpose that God sent his son, so that man could be set free from sin, and their souls are saved from hell? When Jesus speaks things happened. He spoke as one with authority, because he had authority over the devil. We have been given authority over the enemy. When we speak, we speak life where there is death, liberty where there is bondage. As the vessels of God, we speak his words, and we know that he will back us because we speak according to his will.

**Catch a vision of the significance of how studying God's word is preparing you as ministers of life.**

Now I would like to address the importance of having a vision. It seems like every time you turn around you are hearing about a church closing its doors, a pastor resigning his position. Many start out very zealous, on fire for God. But God's people are constantly under attack of the devil. He is constantly condemning you, finding fault with you. We are told in,

***Revelation 12:10 (for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.)***

Satan will use people and situations, and circumstances to come against your mind to try and cause you to become discouraged. If he can get you to take your eyes off Christ, and began to look at the faults, troubles, and problems around you. He will try to get you to think that you are the reason everything is happening, but in reality; he is the reason. When it seems like nothings is going right that is when we need to walk in faith keeping our eyes on Jesus and standing on the promises of God.

**We become weary of the battle when we take are eyes off of Christ.**

If we lose sight of the vision that Christ has given us we become weary and this is the reason why many quit the ministry.

***Galatians 5:7-8 (Ye did run well; who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth? This persuasion cometh not of him that calleth you.)***

Some have great zeal and take off like a shooting star, but they soon burn out. When hard times come, and they will, they quit. This is where having a vision comes in. It will keep us in the hard times.

(We must have three kinds of vision,) We will discuss each one of these separately.

**1, Short term vision**

**2, Long term vision**

**3, Eternal vision**

**1, Short Term Vision,** This vision is what we need to get an energetic start with much zeal. Most people have this vision when they first get saved. They come to Christ and discover the precious gift of salvation. The joy and peace of having a relation with God, they enjoy his wonderful presence. They get involved with activities of the church. Every time the church doors are open they are there. Now short-term vision is a good thing and we all must have it to get a good start. But it can easily burn out if not continually renewed. In many cases when the toils and grind of life begin to conflict with commitment to Christ and church, the excitement of serving God becomes laborious and tedious. We must not become weary when hard times come, not only looking at the results of our labor in the present we must see how our labor will affect the future.

**2, Long Term Vision,** When it seems that everything is going wrong in the present. Remember you cannot always look at the present, you must look to the future. You must have a vision of what God wants you to accomplish with your life in the future. When Jesus hung on the cross many mocked him, and it may have seemed to them that his ministry had been a failure. But they were only looking at the present. We now look at the results of what Christ did, and we see billions of Christians. Not only do you need a short-term vision but also a long-term vision. We are told in,

***Galatians 6:9 (And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.)***

Know that what you say and do today will affect the future. God illustrated this truth in the very beginning.

***Exodus 20:5 (I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me;)***

How much more would your blessings fall on them around you if you served God. Abraham is a good example of how a long-term vision can carry you through. When Abraham was living in a culture full of Idol worship, God spoke to him,

***Genesis 12:1-4 (Now the LORD had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed. So Abram departed, as the LORD had spoken unto him; and Lot went with him: and Abram was seventy and five years old when he departed out of Haran.)***

Abraham left his family and the life he knew. He traveled into a strange land not knowing where he was going. But God had given him a vision of a country that he would inherit. God also told him that his seed would be as the stars in the heaven. But for many years his wife was barren. Abraham waited 25 years before the promise was fulfilled. The short-term vision was for him to go into a land that God would give to him; the long-term vision was that his seed would be as the stars in heaven, as the sand by the seashore and that he would be the father of many nations. God had given him the promise of a son; he had the vision but had to wait 25 years before he began to see the long-term vision began to be fulfilled in the birth of Isaac.

When I began in the ministry God gave me a vision of a Church where the power of God would flow. People's lives would be changed, set free and delivered by the power of God. When I was renovating our building for a church; he spoke these words into to my heart to encourage me, you will be a repairer of the breach. I looked it up in the bible and found it in,

***Isaiah 58: 12 (And they that shall be of thee shall build the old waste places: thou shalt raise up the foundation of many generations; and thou shalt be called, The repairer of the breach, The restorer of paths to dwell in.)***

I know that not only will I see the effects of my ministry now, but also my labors will produce fruit for many generations. Perhaps God has given you a vision of your ministry, keep holding on to it, be obedient to God and you will see it come to pass.

**3, *Eternal Vision***, God brought this to my attention as I was preparing this lesson. Not only do we need a short-term vision to get a zealous start. And a long-term vision to carry us through the hard times but we also need an eternal vision.

We need to catch a vision of what God has prepared for his people. We need an eternal vision, a vision of heaven, a place where the streets are paved with gold. Were there will be no more pain and suffering. Let us look beyond this life to a glorified life, having a new body, around the throne of God worshipping him, dwelling in a city where the lamb is the light. Catch an eternal vision. Realize this one thing the enemy wants you to lose your vision. If he can get you to lose your short-term vision, because of hardships and trials. It will affect your long-term and eternal vision. Even to the point of causing you to miss out on God's purpose for your life.

**There are four more very important things we need to look at concerning our visions.**

**1, *Mans depravity and Sinfulness***, Why has God placed so much emphasis on the salvation of man, why a loving God would send his son to die on a cross for man?

***John 3:16 (For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son.)***

Look through the eyes of God, and see man, who was made in his own image,

***Genesis 1:26 (And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness:)***

Catch a vision of man who was pure and innocent, to the point they were naked and had no shame. See how man turned from God and became so wicked and evil, to the point that God was grieved in his heart,

***Genesis 6:6 (And it repented the lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart,)***

God looks and sees the lying and stealing, killing, homosexuality, the sinfulness of man. It stinks in his nostrils. Catch a vision of the fact that man is lost and going to die and spend eternity in hell. Forever separated from God with no hope of ever being saved.

**2, Your sinfulness without Christ ,** Now look at yourself and your sinfulness. How without Christ you are lost. We are clearly told in,

***Romans 3:23 (For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.)***

And the penalty of sin is death. So, we all deserve to spend eternity in hell. Many may say that they are a good person and look at all the good things I have done. But the bible says,

***Romans 3:10 (There is none righteous, no, not one:)***

***Isaiah 64:6 (But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags.)***

**You were born with a sinful nature, and you will have to deal with it all your life.**

You cannot be good outside of Christ.

**3, See who Christ Is,** Catch a vision of Christ in all his glory and honor and power. He is the King of Kings and the Lord of Lords. And yet this King who knew no sin, became sin so you could be saved.

**4, See who you are in Christ,** When you accept Jesus into your heart, Jesus takes you who are sinful and puts you in him. He makes us acceptable to God by his blood. We become the righteousness of God in Christ Jesus. We are lifted up into heavenly places in Christ.

***Ephesians 2:5-6 (Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)***

***And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:)***

God has bestowed all this love upon his people through his Son. We are sitting on the right hand of God in Christ Jesus. We have been given power and authority over all the power of the enemy, as sons of God.

***Romans 8:16-17 (The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ;)***

We are the heirs of salvation, everything that God has prepared for his people, you are entitled to. Jesus Christ has made us Kings and Priests to our God. God has a plan for your life, seek him with all your heart and he will reveal it to you. Catch a vision, of his will and how this study will prepare you to accomplish it. Guard your vision, protect it, stay true to it, it is your very life.

**SECTION # 1**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 3**  
**SALVATION**

As a Pastor my heart cry is to see men, women, boys, and girls to come to know Jesus Christ, and to accept him as their Savior. I have seen many come and pray the prayer of repentance, only to see them fall away a short time later. This is very disturbing to my spirit, to know that the life of serving God is so much more wonderful, so much fuller, then living a life outside of Christ. There is no comparison, how can you compare death to life, cursing to blessings, Hell to Heaven? so in my heart I searched and questioned why? God in his most wonderful way drew my attention to

*Matthew 13:18-23; “Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower). 19. When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side). 20. But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receive it; 21. Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while; for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended. 22. He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.”*

We learn that the reason why many people fall away is: 1) A lack of understanding of the Word. 2) They have no root or depth in the Word. 3) The Word is choked, or because of the person’s inability to apply the Word to their life. So basically, it comes down to the fact that people need to be able to understand the Word so they can receive the knowledge of how to apply it to life’s situations. That is when God spoke to my heart and said that the people need to get rooted and grounded in his Word.

Out here in the desert there grows a tree called the Palo Verde tree. I have seen many of these trees that have fallen over when a hard wind

blows, because of the lack of depth of their roots. The Bible refers to us as trees, planted by the rivers of Living Waters.

**We as the children of God have to get our roots deep into the Word of God, if we are going to be able to stand in these last days. Being rooted and grounded in the Word is what's going to get you through the trials and tribulations.**

When I was in school, I loved recess, but recess was not what caused me to pass, it was going back into the classroom and getting into the books. We need to be taught the Word if we are going to stand for Christ.

The purpose of this Bible Study is to teach the basics of Christian faith, and by no means do I claim that it contains all of the information that you will need on this subject. This is just a small portion of knowledge that you will find helpful in your walk with Jesus Christ.

The first thing we want to look at is salvation. To do this we must go back to the very beginning.

***Genesis 1:26; “And God said, Let us make man in our image, In the very beginning God made man.”*** Now let us look at ***Genesis 2:7; “And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breath into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.”***

It is clear our very existence, everything that we are and everything we will be, depends on God.

Without God, man is nothing, and without the breath that God has given us, we have no life.

When God created man and breathed life into him, he also gave him power and dominion over everything.

Everything that God created he gave to man. But in all that God gave to man, he also gave him one commandment,

***Genesis 3: 3 “But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.”***



And the very thing that God told them not to do, they did. They broke the only commandment that God had given them. They sinned against God by breaking his commandment. Before they sinned, God and man had fellowship with each other, but as soon as man sinned, that bond of fellowship was broken.

***Genesis 3: 8, "And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden."***

It is clearly illustrated that God came and walked in the garden, and that they knew the sound of his voice. So, it is apparent that God walked in the garden often, for them to know his voice. God and man had fellowship with each other. But when man sinned, it separated man from God. When man had fellowship with God, man was in harmony with nature, but as soon as that relationship was broken, the harmony with nature was broken also. Because of sin man was separated from God, and no longer did the earth produce its' abundance to man. Because of that sin, man was driven out of the presence of God, and the fellowship that man had with God was broken.

That was the worst day in the history of mankind. Some may say that their sins will affect no one, but themselves. But your sins' affect more than just you, they affect everyone around you.

Adam sinned once and look at the affect it has had on the world we live in. Do not kid yourself and think that you will not reap what you have sown. Parents, your sins will affect your children's lives for many generations. Because of the sin of Adam every person born is born with a sinful nature.

***Romans 5: 12 "Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world".***

Because of sin, man lost fellowship with God.

***Romans 5: 19; "For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners."***

Because of one man's sin, we all are born with a sinful nature.

*Psalm 51: 5; "Behold, I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me."*

We are not born with sin in us, because the spirit that God gives to each person is Holy, and without sin. We are born with a sinful nature, but we are not born with sin in us. Sin comes when we learn right from wrong, and if we choose to do wrong it will separate us from God. This is the struggle that takes place inside every person, whether to be good or bad. When we are born, it is natural to eventually do things that will separate us from God. In

*Ephesians 2: 2,12; Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience. "That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world:"*

These scriptures describe man in his sinful state, totally separated from God, having no hope without God in the world.

*2 Corinthians 5: 18-19; "And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.*

**Salvation is God reconciling us to him, because of mans sinful nature we are separated from him, because all have sinned. God wants to bring man back into a relationship with him, being united with God in a one on one relationship. God made all of this possible by the death of his son Jesus Christ.**

In the beginning man and God had fellowship, they walked and talked together. Salvation is being one with God again.

When you get saved you are united in a relationship with God. No longer are you without hope, without peace, joy, and happiness. But when you get God back in your life you gain these gifts. Adam was made in the

image of God he was like God until he sinned. When you are reconciled to God you become like God's image. Some may say that they thought salvation meant being saved from hell, but that is only a part of it. The best part about salvation is having a fellowship with God, enjoying his presence, and experiencing his love.

Now you might ask how man is to be reconciled to God.

Man was separated from God, without any hope, lost. But God loved mankind, he did not want to be separated from man, he longed for fellowship with man. He did not want man to perish, and he knew they would because of their sin. God came up with a plan, a plan to save mankind. The plan of salvation, the bible said, it was from the foundation of the world. To explain the plan of salvation we need to go back to when man fell. Before the fall of man, Adam and Eve were naked, and did not have any shame, but as soon as they sinned their eyes were opened, and they were ashamed.

***Genesis 3: 7 "And the eyes of them both were open, and they knew that they were naked, and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons."***

Man tried to cover up his sin. Isn't this the way we still are today? Always trying to cover up and making excuses.

***Genesis 3:12-13; "And the man said, the women whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me and I did eat."***

Isn't that the way we are, always blaming someone else for our sins and mistakes?

But God had a plan, man was naked and ashamed because of their sins.

***Genesis 3:21 "Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them."*** God spilled the blood of animals

and took their skins to cover mans naked body. This setting the pattern for animal sacrifices for the atone of man sins.

Later, God would establish the law of animal sacrifices through Moses. Man would bring an animal to the Priest, and the animal would be killed as a sin offering for a man and his family. Once a year they would have to do this, year after year. All this would do is cover their sins, not purge their hearts from sin.

*Hebrews 10:1-5 "For the Law having a shadow of good thing to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comer thereunto perfect. For then would they not have ceased to be offered? Because that the worshipper once purged should have had no more conscience of sins. But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me:"*

God provided himself as a sacrifice because of man sin, and that sacrifice was his son Jesus Christ.

*Revelation 13: 8 "The Lamb slain from the foundation of the world."*

God had a plan to offer up a sacrifice to himself for the sins of mankind from the beginning, so we could be reconciled to him.

*Hebrews 10:10, 12, 14. 10. "By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.*

*12. "But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sins forever, sat down on the right hand of God."*

*14. "For by one offering he hath perfected forever them that are sanctified."*

**Jesus was the perfect sacrifice, because he was without sin.**

Jesus was the body that was prepared; he came to do the will of the father, to lay down his life for the sins of many.

***Hebrews 10: 9; "Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second."***

Because Jesus was the perfect sacrifice, there was no more need of the animal sacrifices; he took the place of the law of animal sacrifices.

Jesus did not come to take away the first covenant, but he came to add to the old covenant and to establish a new covenant. The first covenant was a shadow.

***Matthew 5: 17; "Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill."***

Jesus came and fulfilled and completed the law, he paid the price for man's sin. There is no need for any more sacrifices. Jesus was the perfect Lamb of God.

***John 1: 29; "Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world."***

**It could only take a perfect sacrifice, to bring man back into a relationship with God.**

Only by being perfected through the offering of the body of Jesus can we be united to God.

***Romans 5:6,8-10 "For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. 8. But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. 9. Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. 10. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life."***

When we were separated from God without the ability to come to him and be excepted, Jesus died and gave us the ability to become the sons of God.

***John 1: 12; "But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:"***

Because of the love that God has for us, he gave his Son, and now we acceptable unto God by the blood of his Son Jesus Christ. Do not ever forget what Jesus went through for you. We live in a world where many have forgotten his suffering. He was despised and rejection for us. If Jesus gave his all for us, why can't we give our all for him? Only through Jesus can we be saved.

***Acts 4: 12; "Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."***

Now we come to the question, who may obtain salvation?

***John 3: 16; "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life."***

Who may obtain salvation? those that believe on the Son of God.

***Revelation 22: 17; "And whosoever will let him take the water of life freely."***

Salvation is available to all of mankind. Jesus has paid the price for us all.

***2 Peter 3: 9, "The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance."***

God does not want any to perish, but that all will be reconciled to him, and be saved.

***Titus 2: 11; "For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men."***

God loves everyone. They are his creation, and he does not want any to perish. It was never intended for man to be separated from God. We were created to fellowship with God.

***1 John 1-3; "Truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ."***

One of the weapons that the devil uses against people is to tell them that they cannot be saved. Just the simple fact that he is telling them they cannot be saved means that they can be saved. Because he is a liar and is trying to keep them from salvation through Jesus Christ. Jesus can and will save those who come to him.

**Choosing to follow him with their whole heart.**

Let us move now to the next step, salvation. What must a person do to be saved? The first thing you must do to be saved is to realize that you are a sinner, that you are lost and separated from God.

***Romans 3:23; "For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God."***

Everyone has sinned, we are all in need of a Savior.

The second step to salvation is that we must realize we need help to change. We cannot do it on our own, we need help, and that help only comes through Jesus Christ.

If you rely on your flesh, relying on your own abilities, your good works, it will not happen, the change must happen on the inward man, the spirit.

**We do not have the ability in ourselves to change.**

I have seen many who have tried to change but have fallen right back away. You must realize that you need help, and Jesus Christ is the answer. You must rely totally on him, and only then will you be changed by his power and be transformed completely. Jesus said in

*John 10:9; "I am the door, by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved." Also in Matthew 28:18; "All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth."*

So Jesus Christ is the only way to obtain a relationship with God.

Which leads us to the third step, how to come to Christ.

*Matthew 18:2-4; "And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him a the midst of them. 3. And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. 4. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven."*

You must humble your-self. If you come to Jesus with an attitude of pridefulness and boastfulness, you will get nowhere.

You must submit yourself to Jesus in humility.

**Humility comes from a broken repentant heart,**

Realizing that you are nothing without him. Look to him, for who he is, is the King of Glory. If you have problems in your life, and you don't know what to do, run to Jesus. Fall at his feet, submit yourself to him and he will lift you up. Only when you come to him with a meek and lowly humble spirit, will he receive you.

*Psalms 34:18; "The Lord is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart; and saveth such as be of a contrite spirit."*

So, once we come to Jesus, we must accept this gift of salvation.

*Ephesians 3:8; "For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourself; it is the gift of God."*

If I came to you and told you that you just won a 1,000,000 dollars, and all you had to do was sign your name, and if you refused, you would lose the money, what would you do? Well, salvation is a gift from God, and you have to accept the forgiveness that God has for you through his son Jesus Christ. And the way to accept it is by believing,



*Romans 10:9-10; "That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. 10, For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation."*

If Jesus said he would forgive you of your sins he will.

*1 John 1: 9; "If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."*

Once you come to Jesus and ask him to forgive you of your sins, it says in

*Psalm 103:12; "As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions (sins) from us."*

The Devil will try to condemn you and tell you that Jesus has not forgiven you and try to bring up your past. You have to know that Christ has forgiven you.

The one thing you must understand is that when you accept Jesus as your Savior,

**The Devil is going to do everything he can to get you to give up, and fall away.**

Put your trust in Jesus and look to him. Cling to him, as He understands everything you are going through. Jesus gave us the answer in his Word as to what we need to do to stand for him.

He told us in his word to "abide" in him. *"...for without me ye can do nothing."*

**If we are going to stand and not fall, we must stay in Jesus.**

You must realize you cannot do it on your own, you need him. As we abide in Jesus, this gives us fellowship with God, and we draw strength from the Almighty. How do we abide in him, with prayer?

*Ephesians 6:10,18; "Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit."*

We are strengthened as we fellowship with him in prayer, and we gain strength by the Word. Not just by reading, but by studying it so we can receive knowledge, understanding, and revelation. Only then, can we apply it to our lives. Only then can it guide and lead us down the right paths.

Jesus said many times, "...he that hath an ear, let him hear," meaning let him understand. Spend time in prayer and study the Word every day. Jesus said in:

*John 8:31 "If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed."*

Abide in Jesus so you can stand for him, talk to him, walk with him, and spend time with him every day.

Many think that when you come to Christ, and receive him as their Savior, that they will only receive a reward when they get to heaven. This is true, but there are rewards that come by living for Jesus here. We will receive the riches of the Kingdom of God in this life also.

*John 10:10; "I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly."*

When the riches of the Kingdom of God come to you, riches such as joy, peace, love, contentment, happiness, and hope are given to you here on this earth. These riches bring fullness to your life that you cannot experience outside of God. You no longer guess what your life is all about, and why you exist. You find the reason for living is Jesus Christ.

**With Jesus you find purpose, fulfillment, and commitment, the very reasons for living.**

Being unhappy and feeling unloved, having no peace, no joy, being depressed and miserable, is not living life to the fullest. The only way to

live life to the fullest is through Jesus Christ. God wants to bless you in every area of your life, he wants to bless everything you put your hand to.

***3 John 2; "Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth."***

And that's only the beginning, for when this life is over, the best is yet to come.

**SECTION # 1**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 4**  
**HOLY GHOST**

In this chapter of the Bible Study, we are going to study about the HOLY GHOST. The HOLY GHOST is the most wonderful person you are going to meet outside of JESUS CHRIST and the FATHER (LORD GOD JEHOVAH). He has a very meek, timid personality. I like to refer to him as a person, because you can have such an intimate relationship with him.

Now there are certain things that the HOLY GHOST likes and certain things that he does not like, and you can hurt him, or you can make him happy, or you can grieve him or please him. The first thing that we need to find out, is who he is. Let us establish that he is a real deity. He is part of the Trinity Godhead, which consists of the Father, the Son (The Word), and the Holy Ghost, and these three are one.

***1 John 5-7 "For there are three that bear record in Heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one."***

The scripture clearly illustrates that there are three separate deities in heaven. Now, there are some that teach that there is only one, and this is true to a certain extent, but it is not the total truth. I am part of a family, and that family is operational as one, we agree as one, but we are still totally different individuals. My family consists of myself, my wife, and my children. We three are one, as we belong to one family. But we are still individuals, with individual strengths and jobs in our household. The same is true in heaven, one, yet three. GOD the Father, GOD the Son, GOD the HOLY GHOST.

We want to establish what the job of the HOLY GHOST is. Open your bibles to

***Genesis 1: 1-2; "In the beginning God created the heaven and earth. And the earth was without form, and void, and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters."***

If you notice verse 2, it says that the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. Every time the Father spoke words of creation, it put the Holy Ghost (Holy Spirit) into action. The Holy Ghost came to carry out God's words according to his will.

In Genesis 1:3, it says that in the beginning, God commanded that there be light, and the Holy Ghost went into action and there was light. The Holy Ghost is the one who carries out the commands of God; or according to the Word, he is the executor of the Power of God. As we look back into the Old Testament, anytime the anointing is mentioned as coming upon someone, the Word was talking about the Holy Ghost. In the book of Judges, we read a story about a man by the name of Gideon. This man was the least among his brethren, but when the Spirit of God came upon him, he raised up and was used to bring a great victory to God's people.

We also read of a man by the name of Samson, who when the Spirit of God came upon him, gained the strength of many men.

***Judges 15:14-15; "And when he came unto Lehi, the Philistines shouted against him; and the Spirit of the Lord came mightily upon him, the cords that were upon his arms became as flax that was burnt with fire, and his bands loosed from off his hands. And he found a new jawbone of an ass, and put forth his hand, and took it, and slew a thousand men therewith."***

How did these men accomplish these great deeds? They did it by the power of the HOLY GHOST.

All through the Old Testament there are examples of the HOLY GHOST in the lives of men and women that served GOD. He is the executor of the power of GOD!

Let look at some of the examples of the works of the HOLY GHOST in the New Testament.

***Acts 4: 31-33; "And when they had prayed, the place was shaken there they were (assembled together) and they were all filled with the HOLY GHOST, and they spake the word of God with boldness. And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one soul:***

*neither said any of them that ought of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things common. And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all."*

We learn from these scriptures that when the Holy Ghost comes, he will shake us, give us boldness, bring unity, give us power to witness to others, and bring grace.

**The Holy Ghost has a job that is so important to God, that God said through his Son that every sin would be forgiven except blaspheming the Holy Ghost.**

We need to give him reverence. Open your bible to

*Acts 5: 1-11; "But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession.*

*And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles' feet.*

*But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie, to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land?*

*Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.*

*And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things.*

*And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him.*

*And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.*

*And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much.*

*Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out.*

*Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carrying her forth, buried her by her husband.*

***And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things.***

See how powerful the Holy Spirit is. Note that in the scripture it first said Satan filled their hearts to lie to the Holy Spirit, but then later in verse 4, it said they had not lied to men, but unto God. This is another clear indication of how the Holy Ghost and God are separate. Now we know that God is sitting on the throne in heaven, so when these people lied, they lied to God and blasphemy the Holy Ghost. To understand what blaspheming the Holy Ghost means let us look at,

***Matthew 12:30-32 "He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad. 31. Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. 32. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.***

The scripture clearly gives the meaning of the word blasphemy, in verse 32 it says to speak against the Holy Ghost. Now, look at verse 30, to speak against, along with the act or intent of tearing down the work that the Holy Ghost is doing is blasphemy against the Holy Ghost. When somebody comes against the work that the Holy Ghost is doing, with intent to tear down or destroy that work, he hath blasphemed the Holy Ghost.

The reason that Ananias and Sapphira were killed was not only because they had lied, but also because they blasphemed the Holy Ghost. If we study the previous chapter in Acts, you can see what the will of the Holy Ghost was. The move of the Holy Ghost in those days was to establish the new church, and to establish the principles of the new church. In the Old Testament, the people would give offerings to the church, offerings such as livestock, vegetables, grain, and fruits, to meet the needs of the priest. But now that the Holy Spirit was establishing the new church, not only did the priest have needs, but also many people did too. Jesus had taught the people to love others as themselves. So as the church began to grow, there were many needs among the people. The move of

the Spirit was to meet these needs, the elderly, the widowers, the orphans, and many others who had come to know Christ had great needs. Their only means of support was through the church. The move of the spirit was for those who had abundance to bring and give to the church, so that the needs of the people could be met.

When Ananias and Sapphira held back part of the money and lied about it they were coming against the will of God for the church, the move of the Holy Ghost. Even though they may not have spoken against the Holy Ghost, in their hearts they had blasphemed the Holy Ghost. Blaspheming the Holy Ghost is an action of the heart. It is when someone despises God in their heart and his will. Then their deeds or words will show this! Only God knows when someone has come to that place because he knows the heart! The Holy Ghost is the executor of the power of God, he can bring life or death.

God gave permission to the Holy Ghost to kill these people for coming against the will of God. People need to be aware that when they come against the Holy Ghost, the move of the Spirit, or against God's anointed men or women, they are coming against God. The bible clearly says in,

*1 Chronicles 16:22; "...touch not mine anointed, and do my prophets no harm."* Jesus said in

*Luke 10:16; "He that heareth you heareth me, and he that despiseth you despiseth me, and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me."*

He that despises God is walking on dangerous ground.

*Hebrews 10: 29-30; "Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, where with he was sanctified, and unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace? Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord."*

Now I must bring to your attention one of the weapons that the enemy uses against many people. When the Spirit of God is drawing someone to come to Christ. The Devil will tell them that they cannot be



saved, because they have blasphemed the Holy Ghost, or that their sins are too many, or too bad, to be forgiven. This is a lie, if a person has blasphemed the Holy Ghost, the Holy Spirit will not draw that person to Christ.

*John 6:44 No man can come unto me except the Father which hath sent me draw him.)*

**If a person has blasphemed the Holy Ghost there will be no tugging at their heart, they will have no desire for the things of God. The Spirit of God will not draw them, but just the opposite, he will turn them over to the enemy to be destroyed.**

The Holy Ghost is not someone to play with but is someone to fear and reverence.

Let us now study the life of Jesus Christ, Jesus was just an ordinary man like any other, he lived the life of a carpenter. He did no miracles until after he received the Holy Ghost. We read the account of Jesus receiving the Holy Ghost in

*Matt 3:16-17; "And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straight way out of the water. And lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."*

As soon as Jesus was filled, a change took place in his life, he was no longer an ordinary carpenter. The Spirit began to immediately lead him and teach him.

*Matt 4:1-2; "Then was Jesus led up of the spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungered."*

The first thing that the Spirit began to teach him was to be led by the Spirit. The second thing that the Spirit began to teach him was to crucify and deny self. The third thing was to resist temptation and stand in faith. Jesus had received power over the desires of his flesh, and the power to resist temptation. Jesus was in the wilderness fasting and praying for forty days, and he learned a valuable lesson in the desert. He learned how to walk in total obedience to the leadership of the Holy Ghost.

***Hebrews 5: 8; "Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered."***

He thus gave the Holy Ghost total control of his life. The only way we can walk in the fullness of the power of the Holy Ghost, is to learn to be totally obedient to his leading. What the Holy Ghost leads you to do is God's will for your life. When we are disobedient to the leading of the Holy Ghost, we are being disobedient to God.

***Romans 8:14; "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God."***

**We must learn to be obedient to the leadership of the Holy Ghost, or we will never accomplish what God wants us to.**

Look at the results of what happened to Jesus when he learned this valuable lesson. (Note that it only took Jesus forty days to learn total obedience.)

When he returned to Galilee, he had been transformed into a devil stomping, blind eyes opening, leper cleansing, gospel-preaching powerhouse for God!

***Luke 4:14; "And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit."***

***Luke 4:40-41; "Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him; and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them. And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking them suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ."***

When you get full of the Holy Ghost, the executor of the power of God comes to live in you.

You have the most powerful source of power in the universe living within you. You have the ability to bring life or to destroy. You have the power to tear down the devil's kingdom in you. God told his prophet in

***Jeremiah 1:10; "See, I have this day set thee over the nations and over the kingdoms, to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy, and to throw down, to build, and to plant."***

This is the ability that God gives us when we get full of the Holy Ghost and do things according to the leadership of the spirit. Another example of how God will use us is found in.

*Luke 4:18-19; "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor, he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captive, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised. To preach the acceptable year of the Lord."*

The Holy Ghost will give you the ability to accomplish what God has called you to do. Just before Jesus descended into heaven, he gave this command,

*Mark 16:15-18; "And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; They shall take up serpents; and if they drink and deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover."*

Before they could accomplish these commands, something had to happen in them.

*Luke 24:49; "And, behold I send the promise (Holy Ghost) of my father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high."*

*Acts 1:8; "But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you:"*

When you receive the Holy Ghost, you have received the power to go forth and to bring life to many. You have received the power to destroy the works of the devil. The executor of the power of God lives in you.

**Let us now look at another characteristic of the Holy Ghost's personality, not only is he the executor of God's power, but he is also the comforter.**

He has a very meek, timid, loving, caring personality. When Jesus was here on the Earth, he saw the struggles that man faced. He had seen the trials, tribulations, and the temptations that we face every day. Jesus

himself faced temptations and hardships, and he saw that we needed assurance, encouragement, and comfort. Jesus was the comforter when he was here, but he knew that he would be leaving to go back to the Father. So, Jesus made plans to give us another comforter, the Holy Ghost.

*John 14:16-18; "And I will pray the Father and he shall give you another Comforter, that may abide with you forever. Even the Spirit of Truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him; but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. I will not leave you comfortless; I will come to you."*

The Holy Ghost comes to live in us so he can help and comfort us when we have trials and tribulations. He has been sent to help us, when we are hurting, he will comfort us, encourage us, and strengthen us. What a wonderful thought, that he will never leave us, but will be with us through everything. You can go to God, when nobody understands, and God will comfort you through the Holy Ghost.

Another thing that I want to point out, is what the Word says in John 14:17. It says that the Holy Ghost is the Spirit of truth. Now we know that there is great error in the world because the prince of this world, (Satan), is the spirit of error. I heard somewhere that there are over five thousand different religions beside Christianity. Many people are deceived by the devil. Look at,

*2 Timothy 3:13; "But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived."*

The reason why so many people are so deceived and being deceived is because they don't have the Spirit of Truth abiding in them. It says in

*John 16:13; "Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth:"*

**The Holy Ghost will protect you from being deceived.**

You can trust the Spirit of truth to keep you from error, because God has given us the Holy Ghost to keep us on the path of truth. When you hear or see something that is not of God, something that is false and does not line up with the Word or the will of God, the Spirit of truth will be there to quicken to you what the truth or will of God is. You will get a check in your Spirit, which the bible also refers to as an auction of the

Spirit. If you will pay attention to what the Holy Ghost is teaching and telling you, you will not be deceived. Another way the Spirit of truth helps to keep us from deception is he teaches us and gives us revelation of God's Word.

***John 2:27; "But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him." John 14:26; "He shall teach you all things."***

And when the Holy Ghost teaches you, there is no error. The Spirit of truth shall give you wisdom and knowledge concerning the things of God. He will also reveal the Spiritual things of God to you.

Revealing the deep things of God to us,

***Isaiah 28:9-10; "Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line; here a little, and there a little:"***

When knowledge and wisdom is taught to you by the Spirit of truth, confidence, assurance, and peace comes.

***John 14:27; "Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you:"***

When the Holy Ghost comes into your life and you gain knowledge and wisdom, revelation of God and of God's Word. Faith comes alive in you, and the assurance that God has everything under control in your life brings peace. Let us now look at another area of Christ's ministry.

***John 15:26; "But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me:"***

The Holy Ghost has such a humble personality, that he will never seek to be exalted, but he will always lift-up, testify, exalt, and speak the words that Jesus says. Have you ever noticed that when the Holy Spirit is moving in a church service, that the one thing that you feel like doing more than anything else is to worship God? You want to give glory to God and exalt Jesus Christ. I mentioned this earlier, the Holy Ghost has been sent to teach us God's Word.

***John 14:26; "...he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you."***

When you have trials, the Holy Ghost will keep you by bringing back to your remembrance what he has taught you. He will quicken to your mind the words to guide you so that you will know what choices to make. We will all face times when we will have to make decisions, and the Holy Spirit will be with you to help you make the right decisions. He will bring back to your remembrance the Word, and by doing so, guides your footsteps.

***Romans 8:14; "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God."***

He is the one that will give you direction in your life, and we must allow him to guide us and lead us. Another way that the Holy Spirit guides us or keeps us is to put our feet on the right path, by reproofing us of things in our lives.

When we first come to Christ, there are many things in our lives that are not pleasing to him, but Jesus will pick us up and put us in him. He will pick us up in all our filth, uncleanness, and bad habits, and then he will begin to work on us to mold us into his image. This consists of him reproofing and correcting us by the Holy Ghost. This does not always feel good, but it is good for you. It produces the righteousness of God in you!

***Hebrews 12:5-6; "...My son, despise not thou the chastening, (the correcting) of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him. For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth."***

The Holy Ghost is always gentle in his dealings with us, as he deals with us about things in our lives that are hindering him from flowing through us. Many times there will be circumstances and situations where we will need the guidance of the Holy Spirit. He will guide you by a feeling, or by an unction, or sometimes he will speak to you in a still small voice and warn us.

Something may come on television, and the Spirit of God will give you a feeling that it is not right for you to view. This is the Spirit guiding

you. Or you may start to do something, and the Spirit will reprove you. Always pay attention to the leading of the Spirit. Look now at

***John 16:8-11; "And when he is come, he (the Holy Ghost) will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment."***

Of sin, because they believe not on me; Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more. Of judgment because the prince of this world is judged.

**The Holy Ghost will reprove us of doubt and unbelief, and of all the sin in our lives.**

He will reprove us of righteousness. What the scripture is saying, is that Jesus came and lived a holy righteous life, then he ascended into heaven where the Father is, proving to us that we can also live a holy life. We have no excuse why we cannot serve God in holiness and righteousness, if Jesus did it, so can we.

Of judgment, Satan knows his doom, he knows that there will come a day that he will be cast into the lake of fire. And people are without excuses because they have heard the gospel.

The Bible says that people are ignorant of the fact that the Gospel is the Word of God, and those people know that there is a heaven and a hell.

The love of God has appeared unto all man therefore they are without excuse. Don't make excuses as to why you cannot live a holy life, if you step out of line, he will reprove you. Jesus sent us a helper to keep us.

***Proverbs 2:8; "He keepeth the paths of judgment, preserveth the way of his saints."***

The way he often does that is by correcting us sometimes. I mentioned earlier in the chapter that there were some things that grieve or hurt the Holy Ghost, and there are some things that please him. You must always remember he is a gentle Dove. He is timid, meek, and kind. When Jesus was baptized, God chose to picture the Holy Ghost as a dove, a dove that came to light upon Jesus. The reason the Holy Ghost came and lit on Jesus, was because he was worthy. God proved this when he made the statement:

*"This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased."*

How do we walk worthy, what pleases the Holy Ghost? Let's look at.

*Ephesians 4:1-3; "I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called. With all lowliness and meekness, with long-suffering, forbearing one another in love. Endeavoring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace."*

It is clear as to what pleases the Spirit is walking in meekness, humility, and love, one to another. Also, in *verse 12; "...edifying of the body, building up of the body"*, not walking in craftiness or deceit. Speaking the truth, putting off the old conversation, which is corrupt. To please him you must learn to walk in the Spirit, and not in the flesh, you must be obedient to the leading of the Spirit, which is reaching out to others in the love of Jesus.

Let us quickly review; lying, wrath, giving place to the devil, stealing, corrupt communication, bitterness and unforgiveness, anger, clamoring and arguing, evil speaking against others, malice and wickedness all grieves the Holy Ghost. If you notice that most of these are things that we do toward other people, and God is concerned about how we treat other people. We must always walk in love.

**When we do things to hurt or harm others, or walk in disobedience to God's commandment, or are rebellious to the leading of the Spirit, this grieves the Holy Spirit.**

Also, when we reject the Holy Ghost, and we push him not letting him do what he wants to, when we partake of the sinful things of the world and do things that we are not supposed to, these grieve him too. Not resisting evil or temptations, yielding to the devil, watching filth on the television, looking at magazines you're not supposed to, all this grieves the Holy Spirit. On the other hand, yielding yourself to God and helping others pleases him. Let us learn to walk in humility and love, not seeking to please ourselves, but seeking to please God in everything we do. When we are kind one to another and tenderhearted, forgiving one another, this pleases the Holy Ghost.



Now we come to a question that many people have asked, who may receive the Holy Ghost, may I receive it? The answer to these questions is found in.

***Acts 2: 38-39; "Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost, For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call."***

So then, who may receive the Holy Ghost, those that have obtained salvation? Once you come to Jesus and repent of your sins, you may receive the Holy Ghost. Jesus said in

***Matthew 5:6; "Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteous: for they shall be filled."***

To receive the Holy Ghost, you must get hungry and thirsty, desirous of knowledge, longing for it more than anything else.

***Luke 24:49; "And behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high."***

We learn from the scriptures that it is the will of God for all believers to be filled with the Holy Ghost. Faith is believing that God will fulfill his promises to you. And God has promised to fill you, so we must believe that he will fill us if we ask him to.

But receiving the Holy Ghost is a little bit more than that yes; we have to believe, yes; we have to have faith that God wants to fill us, but to receive the Holy Ghost, you must yield yourself to him. I asked the Lord when I was studying, what would be a good example of being filled with the Holy Ghost? I saw in a vision a sponge placed into water, it soaked up the water until it was completely saturated. This is the way we must become to obtain what God wants to give us. We must become so thirsty that we are like that dry sponge, longing for the things of God. We must wait patiently, persistently, and God will fill you! There is a river flowing from the throne of God out to his people, the bible says, whosoever will, let him come and drink of the waters of life. God wants to fill you!

There is certain evidence of being filled with the Holy Ghost, when the Holy Ghost comes live in you there are certain characteristics will be evident. One of them is the ability to live a godly life.

***Romans 8:11-13; "But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwells in you. Therefore, brethren, we are not debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live."***

The word mortify; in verse 13 means to change, to control, to bring into captivity. We through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the flesh. We through the Holy Ghost control fleshly desires and lusts. Before you came to Christ you were controlled by the desires and lusts of your flesh, but now that you have been filled, you are controlled and governed by the Spirit of God. The Holy Ghost gives you the strength to resist the devil, temptations and the desires of the flesh. How are you be strengthened to live a godly life, through the Holy Ghost. When you receive the Holy Ghost and he comes to live inside of you, he brings with him the nature of God, we obtain God's characteristics. Then the attributes of God will become evident in our lives. This means that the way God is, will become the way we will be. The Bible calls these "Fruits of the Spirit", which is evidence of being filled with the Spirit.

***Galatians 5:22-23; "But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance:"***

These fruits or characteristics of the Spirit will help us to deal with other people. When the enemy comes against you, the nature of God will help you to resist temptation. We must realize that without God being in us, we would not have the ability to stand for him. Jesus said without me you can do nothing. God has given us his Spirit so we can be strong!

***Ephesians 3:16; "To be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man:"*** Also in ***James 4:7; "Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you."***

So why are some people so weak spiritually? Because they are not abiding in the Holy Ghost, they are not in fellowship with him. They are

not submitting themselves to God. We do not stand in our own strength, the only way you can live a godly life is to abide in him. Another characteristic that the Holy Ghost gives us is boldness. I mentioned this earlier in the chapter, when you get full of the Holy Ghost you will have no problem testifying and witnessing to others about Jesus Christ.

*Acts 1:8; "But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you; and ye shall be witnesses unto me unto the uttermost part of the earth."*

You will have a boldness you never thought possible, and you will speak with power. You will have the ability to speak the Word of God with convicting power, reproof, correcting, encouraging, and comforting others.

As you speak the truth of God's Word, it will flow from you, because the Spirit of Truth is living in you. The Apostle Peter denied Jesus, but once he was filled with the Holy Ghost, he stood up and preached the Word of God with boldness, and three thousand came to Christ.

I have had many people tell me that they do not know what God's will is for their lives.

This is a part of the Holy Ghost's job, to reveal God's will for our lives. God does not want us to walk around in darkness, because we are the children of light. How can we know how to please God if we don't know what he wants us to do. Look at

*Isaiah 45:11; "Thus saith the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, and his Maker, Ask me of things to come concerning my sons..." Psalm 23:3; "...he leadeth me in paths of righteousness for his name's sake."*

**The Holy Ghost will lead and guide you if you will yield yourself to him, he will reveal to you what God's will is for your life.**

**Zeal is also a characteristic you will receive when you are filled with the Holy Ghost.**

God gives you the ambition, and the determination to accomplish what he leads us to do.

*Daniel 11:32; "...but the people that do know their God shall be strong and do exploits."*

They will do great things for God, and they won't become discouraged in the midst of opposition. The zeal of God will drive them to achieve great things for him.

When you get filled with the Holy Ghost, you also enter into a Supernatural rest, you rest in God, for you know that you are in his hand.

***Isaiah 28:11-12; "For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing:"***

The closer you get to God, the deeper you move into the Spirit, and the more you realize what an awesome powerful God he really is. You realize that he is able to take care of you no matter what. When you move into the Spirit, problems disappear, and those problems don't stress you out anymore.

That is why we can rest because we are in him, and we cast all our cares on him. The Holy Ghost gives God's people rest, when you move into the deep things of the Spirit, your weary soul will be refreshed.

Now we are going to address one of the controversial issues that is in the church today. Do all that are filled with the Holy Ghost speak in tongues? We are going to look at four different people in the Bible.

First the mother of Jesus, the angel Gabriel spoke and told her,

***Luke 1:35 "The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee:"***

This is a good description of being filled with the Holy Ghost. This was evident when Mary went to see her cousin Elisabeth, the moment she greeted her, Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost. The Holy Ghost flowed through Mary and into Elisabeth, so we have Mary and Elisabeth filled with the Holy Ghost.

We also have the husband of Elisabeth, Zacharias becoming filled with the Holy Ghost.

***Luke 1: 67; "Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied."***

Then we have the example of Jesus, who was also filled with Holy Ghost. In all four of these examples, not one time was it mentioned that they spoke in tongues. Let us look now at

***Mark 16: 17; "And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;"***

Many have taken this scripture and used it to refer to speaking in the Holy Ghost, (tongues). They say that all who believe and who are filled with the Holy Ghost will speak in these new tongues.

Because of a misunderstanding of this scripture, the enemy has used it as a stumbling block to many people. People, who as they sought to be filled with the Holy Ghost, who didn't speak in other tongues right away, the enemy brought doubt and unbelief into their hearts. He told them because they did not speak in other tongues, that they did not get filled, thus discouraging them.

This scripture means that a person will have a change in their conversation. In other words, where they use filthy and vile language, they would no longer talk that way.

Now there is evidence that when we are filled with the Holy Ghost, we can speak in tongues as the spirit gives utterance.

***Acts 2: 1-4; "And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance."***

We have evidence of some that were filled with the Holy Ghost, who did not speak in tongues, and some who did! The difference is that not all receives the gift of tongues. Paul asked in,

***1 Corinthians 12: 28-31; "And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues. Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles? Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret? But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way."***

Paul ask the question ‘do all speak in tongues’? We all do not have the same calling, nor do we all have the same job. All have not received the gift of speaking in tongues.

***1 Corinthians 12:4; "Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit."***

To another divers kinds of tongues. In verse 11;

***"Spirit dividing to every man severally as he will."***

To sum this up, I believe that everyone who is filled with the Holy Ghost can speak in tongues. However not everyone will, because not everyone receives the gift of tongues. If you are seeking the Holy Ghost, get hungry and thirsty for it more than anything else and you will receive.

There is something I have noticed about speaking in tongues, I generally cannot think in tongues, and the only time I can speak in tongues is when the Holy Ghost comes upon me. You must remember when you are speaking and praying in tongues, it is your spirit that is praying to God. Your natural man is without understanding,

***1 Corinthians 14:14; "For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful."***

Many times, when you are praying in the Spirit, the Spirit begins to intercede through you for others.

***Romans 8:26-27; "Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God."***

Tongues are a way that we release inner burdens to God, also a way that the Holy Ghost channels the power of God through us to others. Praying in the Spirit is also a way that Holy Ghost edifies us.

***Jude 20; "But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost."***

The bible says in the last days that there would be signs and wonders, and tongues are a sign.

***1 Corinthians 14: 21-22; "In the law it is written, With men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto this people; and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord. Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe not: but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them, which believe."***

God through the Holy Ghost, by tongues and interpretation, speaks to his people to encourage and to edify. Also speaking in the Holy Ghost is a sign of the Glory of God is in the midst of his people. I pray that this study of the Holy Ghost has caused a hunger for God, and more of a hunger for the Holy Ghost to be birthed into your heart. There is so much more on the subject of the Holy Ghost that we have just scratched the surface, dig deep into the things of God.

**SECTION # 1**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 5**  
**FAITH**

In this chapter, we are going to learn all about faith and what faith means to us as Christians. We will look at why faith is essential to every aspect of our Christian life, and why **we cannot possibly survive spiritually without it.** Everything we are and everything that we will obtain from God will be through faith. It is our very strength, our very life. This is why the enemy attacks it so hard because without faith you cannot please God and will not make heaven your home.

I have heard many people that attend church regularly state that they trust in God. They say in the same breath that they have placed their trust in him to answer their prayers and meet their needs. In the very next breath, they say something like “well, if God wants to, or God can’t help, or God can’t influence this situation, or it is just too bad for him to fix it”. They have in essence placed God in a box and then managed to tie his hands to boot. Do you think that God can’t or won’t perform his word, or promises to you?

Webster’s Dictionary defines faith as a belief in something unseen. Faith is much more than that, it is the very substance or the very essence of our belief in Jesus Christ. Faith is belief in something you cannot see but have the assurance you already possess. Faith is not mind power. Faith is a characteristic of the Spirit of God in our lives and hearts. The whole plan begins when through faith we accept Jesus Christ as our Savior. But this doesn’t stop there; this is only the first step in a very long journey. We first have to believe (have faith) that Jesus died for our sins and then was resurrected on the third day.

We have to confess our new faith openly and then through the grace of God, we obtain salvation.



Every man has been given a chance at salvation, in fact there are very few that have not heard about Jesus Christ, especially here in the United States. It says in

***Romans 12:3; "God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith."***

This literally means that God through his mercy and grace has given each of us the CHOICE to accept or to reject salvation. If you ask most people if they believe in a higher being or power, they will admit to believing that there is something beyond our understanding. It really isn't beyond our understanding, it is found in the Holy Bible, in God's precious word.

Many of those same people will say that they believe in God, but that they choose to not follow Christ.

What is important, is to understand just how God looks at faith, and requires that we have faith enough to accept that Jesus Christ shed his blood to atone for our sins.

**Faith is obtainable through our Lord Jesus Christ.**

It is the very basis of our walk with him and must become an everyday exercise.

Let's break faith down into several categories and see how it is vital to us, and how we obtain everything from God through our faith. We are saved by faith. It tells us in:

***Ephesians 2:8, "For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God."***

What a gift this is, for without God's amazing grace toward us, we could not do anything at all. It says that we can't do this ourselves, it is through God's grace, is a most precious gift. It tells us in.

***Romans 12:3; ...according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.***

God's mercy and grace extends to every man, woman and child on this earth. That includes those that choose to ignore or turn down this gift from God Almighty. We have to walk by faith. It tells us in:

***II Corinthians 5:7 (For we walk by faith, not by sight).***

This scripture speaks volumes to us and is important to study and take to heart. Our walk with Jesus Christ is not an easy one at times and requires that we accept God at his word and believe his promises to us. How we live and react to problems and life circumstances is the real test of your faith.

Now I know that there is no one here that has seen Jesus with their natural eyes, but we have seen him with our spiritual ones. We see his intervention in each of our lives and we know and feel his presence too. Many have seen him in the spirit or in a vision, but none have actually seen him in person.

We have learned to not depend on what we visually see with the natural, we have to remember to focus on the spiritual, and then Christ will become just as real as you and I.

**We are expected to live our daily lives by faith.** We are told in

***Galatians 3:11 "But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith."***

Paul tells us in

***"Acts 13:38-39; Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins: <sup>39</sup>And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses."***

Pay real close attention here because this is very important. We must realize that once we accepted Jesus Christ as our Lord and Savior, and was washed clean in his precious blood, that once he came to dwell in us, that the law didn't apply any more. The law of animal sacrifices does not apply to us. Just because we are under grace, we must still keep

the law but the keeping of the law will not justify a man, faith in Jesus Christ does.

In other words, the Law of Moses will not save us. Jesus Christ is what ensures our salvation, not some earthly rules or guidelines. However, and this is important, we still have to live by the rules. God gave Moses the rules to live by, and the sacrifice that Christ made for us at Calvary ensured our salvation. Now, because we have him within us, we have to take those very laws to heart and do the will of God through them.

The law will not save you the only one that will is Jesus Christ.

**We will inherit all things from God by faith.** It tells us in

*Acts 26:18 "To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me."*

Inheriting what you may be asking yourself? Our inheritance is not found here on earth, it is spiritual. Our inheritance is eternal, not temporal; it is the Kingdom of Heaven. It is true that we were grafted into Jesus Christ through our accepting him as our Lord and Savior, it goes way beyond that.

*James 2:5 "Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him?"*

**Faith is what moves the hand of God,** not unbelief or doubt. All unbelief or doubt does is prevent us from receiving what God wants for us to have.

Let's move on to a scripture, and I will illustrate something essential to all of us. In

*Hebrews 11:6 "But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him."*

Does God's Word say that prayer is the way to please God if we have little faith? Does it say that we can get to him by our works, or because we go to church 4 times a week?

No, **the Word says that without faith it is IMPOSSIBLE to please him.** It means that without faith, you will not move the hand of God, and no matter what you do, you do it in vain if you have no faith. So if having faith is so important, then maybe we should spend some more time talking about it here.

***“Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.” Hebrews 11:1***

Faith is the basis of what we believe, and what we hope for is salvation through the blood of Christ.

What is a “substance”? A substance is what is the very basis or root. In this part of the scripture, substance means just that. It is the basis or the root of our belief. We have to have faith in Christ before we obtain salvation. Faith is also the bottom line to our walk.

In that we do not see with the eye what God promises us in the Word. I have heard many people use the term “blind faith”. Our faith is not blind; we just can't see Jesus Christ with our natural eyes. Through our faith, belief and relationship with him, Jesus becomes very real to us.

On the other hand, we see the things of God every day, and in the things that we witness and partake of.

Something as simple as dirt, or as complex as the human body shows us God's involvement. If you think about dirt, it can be very complex too. It contains nutrients for plants to survive and grow and mature. Without those plants to feed us, our diets would not sustain us for very long, because we need the vitamins they supply. We read about the things of God in his Word, and we have a faith that is not blind, it is focused spiritually. We are told in,

***Romans 10:12-17 “For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon***

*him. <sup>13</sup>For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. <sup>14</sup>How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? <sup>15</sup>And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! <sup>16</sup>But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report? <sup>17</sup>So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.*

In this scripture, Paul is telling us that we have been grafted in with God's chosen people.

And then goes on to tell us that we have to go to church. If faith comes by hearing, and hearing comes by the gospel, then we can say that faith comes by hearing God's Word. If you do not go to church, how will your maturity ever advance or progress? Now I am not going to say that the Holy Ghost can't teach you, but I believe that you have to reach a certain level of maturity in the Lord before the Holy Ghost can take over, and you have to be walking in the spirit. If you aren't walking in the spirit, you will never be able to reach maturity.

When you went to school, you began in kindergarten, not in the 12<sup>th</sup> grade. Every grade you went through, the teacher had to prepare you to move to the next level, then as you matured and progressed, you learned more and more through personal study and research.

I believe that in your walk with Christ, it is similar to going to school. You have the 5-fold ministry to help you learn, and of course you have your "homework" too. In

***Ephesians 4:11 "And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers."***

When you were in the 2<sup>nd</sup> grade, you could not teach yourself the things necessary for you to learn to move on to the 3<sup>rd</sup> grade. If you do not learn from a teacher, pastor, evangelist, apostle or prophet, you will not be able to teach yourself.

I have heard many people say that they do not attend church because all the church wants is their money. This is the subject of another sermon or lesson, and I will not cover it here, except to say that the Word of God tells us in.

***Hebrews 10:21-25 “And having an high priest over the house of God; <sup>22</sup>Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water. <sup>23</sup>Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised;) <sup>24</sup>And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works: <sup>25</sup>Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.”***

So, we have now learned that we have to go to church (school) and learn about Jesus Christ. God has told us in his word that he has sent those to teach us and remember that there are many that are out to deceive us. If something someone is teaching something that does not line up with the Word of God, then it is deception and not of God. Learn to listen to those that you are sure are teaching you the proper way, not those that just tickle your ears.

Let’s move on a bit and talk about some biblical men of faith. If we read the story of Noah that is found in the book of Genesis,

We see God commanding Noah to construct an ark according to God’s specifications. Take note here, do you see anywhere in these scriptures where Noah questions God? Do you read anywhere here where Noah makes excuses or says it is impossible to build this ark? Well, the answer here is a resounding NO! Noah does not argue with or question God about this project. Do you think that maybe God looked at Noah’s heart and this is part of why Noah found favor with God?

Now take a few more moments to think here, do you think that Noah lived on the seashore? Or that Noah lived next to any body of water? No,

God told Noah that he was going to destroy the earth with a great flood and Noah had faith in what God had told him would come to pass.

Also, since Noah lived in the desert on dry arid land, do you think that Noah's neighbors may have had a bit of fun mocking Noah for building this boat on dry land, land that was nowhere near any body of water? Did you read anywhere in this scripture where God told Noah about constructing sails, or for that matter, a rudder? Did you read anywhere where it said that Noah was a boat builder?

In the days of Noah, the only way to steer a boat was with a rudder, and it had to be propelled with the prevailing wind. So, we now see through this scripture how Noah stepped out in faith in many different areas in regards to this ark that God told him to build. In

**Luke 18:27 “The things which are impossible with men are possible with God.”**

We can now see how when God tells us that something is going to happen, it does. God can make a way in any situation. Have faith that what God says is just and true. In Noah's case, Noah had to step out in faith and allow God to have his way totally in this situation. Noah had faith about God's hand being involved in the total picture, not just a few things. Noah knew and had faith that even though God did not specify anything about sails or about a rudder to steer the ark, that God would oversee and make everything come out the way it should.

**Have faith that God is going to make a way, no matter how impossible the situation may appear.**

The bible says that with God, that all things are possible, not a few things, not some things, and ALL things! There are going to be times that we have to step out in faith just like Noah did.

And totally trust God to take care of what he wants to have happen.

**There may come a time that you may have to step out in faith** and build your ark without sails and without a rudder too. Have faith as Noah did, and accept God's word for what it is, always just and sure.

Let's talk about another man of faith. Let's talk about Abraham. Everyone knows about the story of how God told Abraham to sacrifice Isaac. Abraham doesn't argue with God either, he did exactly as he was told. I have heard many men and women of God preach about this story and most preach that Abraham did this out of obedience. That is true, but it was an act that was beyond obedience, it was also a major act of faith!

You may be asking how could this possibly be an act of faith?

***Genesis 18:17-19 "And the LORD said, Shall I hide from Abraham that thing which I do; <sup>18</sup>Seeing that Abraham shall surely become a great and mighty nation, and all the nations of the earth shall be blessed in him? <sup>19</sup>For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the LORD, to do justice and judgment; that the LORD may bring upon Abraham that which he hath spoken of him."***

Abraham knew that God had promised that the nations of the earth would be blessed through him. God goes on to promise him.

***Chapter 21:12-13 "And God said unto Abraham, Let it not be grievous in thy sight because of the lad, and because of thy bondwoman; in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her voice; for in Isaac shall thy seed be called. <sup>13</sup>And also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is thy seed. "***

Now God had promised Abraham that in Isaac, Abraham's seed would be called to create a nation. If Abraham sacrificed Isaac as God commanded him, he had FAITH that God would still bring his word to pass. In other words, Abraham believed that God would resurrect Isaac from the dead if Abraham did as God commanded. Then because of his faith and his obedience to God, he was blessed beyond anything he could imagine. Faith in God and his promises moves God's hand!

These men are not the only people of faith found in God's word. These men had great faith, but there are others too.

I want to talk for a few moments about a woman of great faith, the woman with the issue of blood. We are told in,



***Matthew 9:20-22 " And, behold, a woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched the hem of his garment: <sup>21</sup>For she said within herself, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole. <sup>22</sup>But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour."***

In the above scripture we read about a woman that had spent her money on going to doctors. Read this scripture carefully and you begin to see some interesting things. First, she heard that Jesus was coming to town, and she had heard all about the healings done during his ministry. She just knew in her heart if she could get close enough to him and touch him, that she would be healed too. Now look at where and how she manages to touch him. It says that she touched the “hem” of his garment. Anyone that has done any sewing knows that the hem of any garment is the lowest point of that article of clothing. This means that she had to have been on the ground.

I believe that if you think about her actions you will begin to understand why she had great faith. The bible tells us she had been bleeding for a long time. According to the law of Moses she was not allowed out into the public. No doubt she knowing this took a risk and pressed through to Jesus Christ even in her weakened state. Now look at what the end results, she touches Jesus and because of her faith is made whole. It does not say that the bleeding is stopped only, it says she was made whole. Any other malady, physical abnormality or problem that she may have had was taken care of too. She did four things she heard, believed, acted, received. Isn't that wonderful? We have already learned or will soon be learning that there are 2 main aspects to God's word.

1. The natural aspect
2. The spiritual aspect

I am not referring to the Logos (written) word and the Rhema (spoken) word, but instead I am referring to the way God's word manifests itself to us. Those that are experienced in spiritual warfare know that battles that

get won in the Spirit eventually manifest themselves in the natural. This is the subject of another series of lessons and would take far too much time here to go into. Suffice it to say that God's word has applications in the natural world where we live and work, as well as in the spiritual. Faith operates in the Spirit. When everything you see or feel says the opposite of the word of God, stand on the word. Many times

**We must win our victories in the spirit, before they will manifest themselves in the natural.**

Remember, when you read the word of God, that what you are reading has practical natural applications as well as spiritual. This is fairly universal throughout the bible, and of course there are exceptions. There are areas that only apply to the natural and some to only the spiritual. But when you read and study, you must always study and digest the word completely. This is where the Holy Ghost comes in to assist you in digesting and understanding what God has written, as well as give revelation of the mysteries contained in there too.

We have seen that there are many that think they are "smart" enough to not have to go to church and are so proud they deny they need to. Deception extends from Satan to many intelligent powerful people. Do not become one of those deceived into thinking that they can make it on their own. Focus your faith on who really deserves to have it.

If you come to church because you are running after a particular preacher or minister, you are running after the wrong thing. Run after Jesus Christ.

**Faith is not something you apply once in a while, it is a state of heart, and it is a way of living that cannot be compromised or changed for anything.**

Don't think that your works will be enough to make it either, you have to have the faith too.

*Matthew 7:21-23 "Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord,*

*have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.*

Faith is just the beginning.

And when you have faith in Jesus Christ you just want and desire to work for him.

*James 2:20 " But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?"*

*James 2:26 " For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.*

You are not going to help bring very many people to Christ in these last days sitting inside the 4 walls of your church. Didn't God command us to not sit in the church but to go find those that are lost?

*Luke 14:23 " And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be filled.*

When the disciples came to Jesus and asked him why they could not cast a demon out of a young boy that had a spirit, Christ told them in

*Matthew 17:19-21 " Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out? And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting."*

Jesus is telling us that we have to have faith, AND we have to pray and fast to become effectual in the battle against the darkness in this world. Don't think that you will be effective in your warfare if you are not praying, fasting and reading the word of God regularly. You need to have all the tools that you have been given and promised for you to be effective and able to stand against the attacks of the enemy. Paul tells us that we have to have the whole armor of God.

*Ephesians 6:10-18 " Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. <sup>11</sup>Put on the whole armour of God, that*

*ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. <sup>12</sup>For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. <sup>13</sup>Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; <sup>And</sup> your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; <sup>16</sup>Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. <sup>17</sup>And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints."*

Paul said in verse 13 and 14 to stand after you have done all that you can. Just what is he trying to convey to us here? Just what is "all" that we can do? First,

**When the enemy comes to attack us, the tools we have been given through the word will allow us to prevail.**

Let's list them out here.

1. Truth
2. Righteousness
3. Gospel of peace
4. Faith
5. Salvation
6. God's word
7. Prayer
8. Fasting

What truth is being referred to here? It is the truth found in God's promises to us in his word. The truth that what God has promised us will happen. This is where the faith comes in, and if we believe what the word says, it will happen. If we ask for things in unbelief, or we say that God will not or cannot help us we set ourselves up for failure.

***Ephesians 4:13-14; "Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;"***

Righteousness is powerful in that when we have no sin in our lives, the demons know and fear us. They know that we are God's children, and we have been given power over them and they tremble. The Gospel of peace is found in God's promises and in his precious word. Faith is just what we are learning about here, and it is essential to us exercising power over the devil and his minions. Our salvation comes from the blood of Jesus Christ, refer to the lesson on salvation for more information. God's word is necessary to defeat the devil. We have all read how Jesus was led into the desert and fasted for 40 days, and how Jesus Christ defeated the devil with the word of God.

Finally, prayer and fasting factor in. In you do not have a relationship with Jesus, and you are not making sacrifices through fasting and other ways, you will not operate far enough in the spirit arena to have any effect. Yes, you will be able to have a prayer answered now and then, but you will not have the power that God intends us to have. Please remember that we are joint heirs with Jesus Christ.

***Romans 8:16-17 "The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together."***

So, if we are heirs jointly with Christ, it means we are entitled to all the same things he is, including power over the devil. All it takes is faith for God to move his hand on your behalf or empower you with his miracle working wonders.

When we come under prolonged attack our faith can begin to falter and waver.

It is easy to become burned out however God will give us a spiritual "boost" or gift when we begin to run low on faith. I believe that this is

when the gift of faith is given us to cope with this spiritual faith deprivation. If you look to your own body for comparison, if you work hard all day, or you exert yourself physically to the point of exhaustion, what happens when something happens to you? Your involuntary side takes over, and your body sends a burst of adrenaline into your system to help you get through the situation you are in. God does the exact same thing in the spirit when you get exhausted, if you look to him for help in your time of need.

Now let's examine the types of faith we find in the word. I believe that there are basically 3 types or levels of faith.

### ***1, Little (lack of) Faith***

We have all read the story of how the ship that the Lord and the disciples were in came into a large storm that tossed the boat to and fro. The boat was taking on water and was in danger of sinking. We read in

***Matthew 8:25-27 "And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish. And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm."***

Several times Christ rebuked the disciples for not having much faith. Here they didn't have the faith to know that Jesus would not allow them to perish in this boat. They got scared and fearful. When we get our eye off of Christ and on circumstances or situation it will cause your faith to waver. So through this and several other instances, we learn that little faith gets us nowhere.

### ***2, Small (having some) faith***

There is a marked difference between having little faith and having small faith. We read in

***Matthew 17:20 "...If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you."***

A mustard seed is very small and you can place many of them on the tip of your finger at the same time. So, you see, having a small amount of faith gives us power through the word of God, not to move natural mountains necessarily, but instead to move the mountains of the attacks

or the problems that we are experiencing at that moment. If small faith can move mountains, what do you think great faith will bring?

### ***3, Great faith***

**Having great faith is attainable if we pay a price to get it,** and few will pay that price.

***Matthew 22:14 "For many are called, but few are chosen."***

This literally means that many are asked to sacrifice for God personally, but few actually do it. What are the sacrifices God is asking for? It is more than going to church one day a week and being a pew warming weekend warrior. God asks us to pray, and he asks us to pray more than a few times a week. In

***1 Thessalonians 5:17-18 "Pray without ceasing. <sup>18</sup>In everything give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you."***

God isn't telling us that it is ok to just pray when we are in the church, but instead is telling us to pray all the time.

**Prayer is how we develop that relationship with God that helps to strengthen our faith.**

We have seen that without faith, when the enemy comes, and he will show up, we cannot possibly stand against the assault.

Fasting is another sacrifice that God asks of us. Remember when Jesus told the disciples that the reason they could not cast the demon out of the boy that had seizures was because that kind came out only by prayer and fasting? Fasting and seeking God helps to draw us closer to him. Paying tithes is important too and isn't to be overlooked. I have heard many people say that God is blessing them even though they do not pay tithes. The reason they do not pay tithes is because the church only wants their money. I am not going to go into detail here, but I will say that if you do not pay tithes you are not denying the church, you are actually denying God. You are denying yourselves the blessings of God. Faith is vital to your walk with Jesus Christ, and it is important that you begin your journey with him through faith. You have learned that without faith you can't mature in Jesus, and you can't please God. You have to become strong and exercise this faith daily, not just when you come to church. Read the word, study, fast and pray without ceasing.

**SECTION # 1**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 6**  
**PRAYER**

I want to take you with me now into a study of a very important part of your Christian walk, and that is prayer. What a privilege it is to be able to commune with the Creator of the universe, to enter his presence to fellowship and commune with God through prayer.

**Praying is just as important to you as studying the Word of God.**

You should spend as much time in prayer as you do in studying the Word. Every man or woman of God that is being greatly used of God is a person of prayer.

Prayer is your very life as a baby Christian in the Lord.

Have you ever seen a baby that could survive without its mother? It needs that mother to provide food and shelter, to care for it. Well, when you come to Jesus, you need much fellowship with him.

**One of the ways that you fellowship with God, is through prayer.**

As a newborn Christian, you need to learn to take time to seek God, and that basically is what prayer is. You have to learn to seek him, to call on God in the time of trouble.

***Romans 10:13; "For whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved."***

All through the bible, we read about God's people who prayed and saw God intervene on their behalf. Many great victories were won through prayer. We read in the book of 2 Kings Chapter 18-19, a story of an invading army coming against God's people. Hezekiah the king of Jerusalem had desired conditions of peace, to no avail. Let us read,

***Kings 19:15-19; "And Hezekiah prayed before the Lord, and said, O Lord God of Israel, which dwellest between the Cherubims, thou art the God, even thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth; thou hast made heaven and earth. Lord, bow down thine ear, and hear: open,***



*Lord, thine eyes, and see: and hear the words of Sennacherib, which hath sent him to reproach the living God. Of a truth, Lord, the kings of Assyria have destroyed the nations and their lands, And have cast their gods into the fire: for they were no gods, but the work of men's hands, wood and stone: therefore they have destroyed them. Now therefore, O Lord our God, I beseech thee, save thou us out of his hand, that all the kingdoms of the earth may know that thou art the Lord God, even thou only.*

So here we have Hezekiah talking to God, about how this invading army had destroyed the other nations and their gods. Then he cried "save us O Lord our God." Now listen to how God answers him.

*2 Kings 19:34-35 "Therefore thus saith the Lord concerning the king of Assyria, He shall not come into this city, nor shoot an arrow there, nor come before it with shield, nor cast a bank against. By the way that he came, by the same shall he return, and shall not come into this city, saith the Lord. For I will defend this city, to save it, for mine own sake, and for my servant David's sake. And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the Lord went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and five thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they were all dead corpses."*

God moved on the behalf of his people. And he will on your behalf. God is just as concerned about you as he was with them.

**God wants us to pray and seek him, he is concerned with every area of our lives.**

He is our Father, and he loves us very much. We can go to him and tell him how we feel and let him know our needs. We express our love to him, and he already knows your heart, but he likes for us to tell him. You can go to him about everything.

*1 Peter 5:7; "Casting all your care upon him; for he careth for you.*

He understands everything about you and what is happening in your life, there is nothing that you may be going through that Jesus has not been through and you can go to him with everything.

*Hebrews 4:14-16; "Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into heaven, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are yet without sin."*

He understands everything you are going through, your sicknesses, trials, tribulations, persecutions, in other words, everything that happens to you.

Prayer is communing with our Heavenly Father. When you came to Jesus and gave your heart and life to him, you were adopted into the body of Christ. You are his child now, and his ears are open to your prayers.

*Psalms 34:15; "The eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous, and his ears are open unto their cry."*

You must remember that he always hears your prayers, and there is never a time when he does not hear the cries of your heart.

Listen to what the Psalmist says in

*Psalms 3:4-5; "I cried unto the Lord with my voice, and he heard me out of his holy hill. I laid me down and slept; I awaked; for the Lord sustained me."*

**Even in the midst of troubles you can have peace, knowing that God hears and answers prayers.**

Now I want to look at Jesus, and the example that he set for us with his prayer life. As we look at his life, you will notice that he was a man who spent much time in prayer. Let us look at some examples.

*Matthew 14:23; "And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone."*

*Mark 1:35; "And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed."*

*Luke 6:12; "And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God."*

*Luke 9:28-29; "And it came to pass about an eight days after these sayings, he took Peter and John and James, and went up into a*

*mountain to pray. And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistening."*

Jesus was lifted into the realm of the Spirit as he prayed. When you begin to seek God with all your heart, you pour yourself out to him.

As a broken vessel you can enter his presence because,

**As you pray from your heart, you are lifted into the very presence of God. Earnest, sincere prayer moves the hand of God.**

It says in

*James 5:16-18; "The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much. Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months. And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit."*

When you seek God, he sits up and takes notice.

*Hebrews 11:6; "But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him."*

Jesus himself tell us in

*Matthew 6:6; "...pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly."*

So, when you begin to pray and seek God, God will begin to move on your behalf.

**Through prayer you draw strength from him,**

As you seek him, he rewards you with his anointing and fills you with his Spirit.

Situations and circumstances begin to fall into place, and problems work themselves out. The next thing you know, you look around and things have changed for your benefit.

One time I needed 10,000 dollars, and I went to the Lord and told him my need. In a short time, I had 10,000 dollars in my hand, hallelujah!! God answers the prayers of his people, when we go to him in faith knowing that he hears our prayers. Everything that we need comes from God, the Scripture says in

***Philippians 4:19; "But my God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus.***

We must realize that all the answers to questions, all the strength we need to stand, and everything else that we need comes directly from God. You have access to God through prayer.

***Ephesians 2:18; "For through him (Jesus) we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father.***

You might say that you aren't worthy enough to come before the Father, and you are right, but you are made worthy by the blood of God's only begotten son, Jesus Christ the righteous one. You enter in through him. By his name, everything that we do, we do in the name of Jesus Christ. We enter into the very presence of God by the name of Jesus. We enter into and fellowship with God.

***1 John 1:3; "...truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.***

Even though we all have shortcomings and failures, we can go to Jesus, and he will take us with him to the mercy seat of God.

***Hebrews 4:16; "Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in the time of need.***

I don't know about you, but there are times when I need God's help, I call out to him, and he covers me with his love (grace), and he helps me to stand for him. You have got to learn to draw from God, so you can stand when the enemy comes against you.

So far, we have been learning about seeking God, and entering into his presence. Now I want to look at prayer in a different light. When you pray you are humbling and submitting yourself to God. When you cry-out to him, you are telling him that you need his help. When the Spirit of God drew you to Christ you admitted that you were a sinner, you had to humble yourself knowing that he would forgive you of all your sins. Admitting your sins or weeping in his presence is an act of humility. You might say that all you did was weep to Jesus, Weeping is when we are releasing the hurt and pain in our hearts, opening up to God and crying out to him to help us because we need him.

I want to share a story with you out of God's Word. This story is about a woman who did not say one word to Jesus, but Jesus completely forgave her of all her sins.

*Luke 7:36-48; "And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisees house, and sat down to meat. And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisees house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, And stood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment. Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner. And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. There was a certain creditor, which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty. And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most? Simon answered and said, I supposed that he, to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, thou hast rightly judged. And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman since the time I came in hath not ceased to kiss my feet. My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little. And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven.*

Even though she did not speak with her mouth she spoke with her heart, because true repentance comes from the heart. When you begin to seek after God, you will find him.

*Jeremiah 29:12; "Then shall ye call upon me, and ye shall go and pray unto me, and I will hearken unto you. And ye shall seek me,*

*and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart. And I will be found of you.*

True prayer is seeking God with a humble heart. And if you will seek him earnestly you will see him move on your behalf.

*2Chronicles 7:14; "If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways: then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin. And will heal their land.*

If we will seek God, we can see our loved ones come to Christ, souls will be saved, bodies healed, and people will be set free and delivered.

**Prayer is an act of humbling ourselves to God.**

We must realize that we are weak, but he is strong, and that we need him in every area of our lives. Jesus said in

*John 15:5; "I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.*

Prayer is a way that we abide in him. Paul said in

*Thessalonians 5:17; "Pray without ceasing.*

**Continually seek the face of God, spending time with him, and seek to learn his will for your life.**

Seek him, for he will give you guidance and direction for your life, learn of the love and compassion that he has for us all. We pray and talk to him, and he talks to us. By spending time with him, we learn the sound of his voice, and the leading of his Spirit.

*John 10:4; "And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers."*

God's love is so great for you that he gave his son to die in your place. He did it because of his love for you, and all he wants you to do is love him back. When we love someone, we want to find out everything there is to know about that person, and we want to spend time with them.

Plan to make time to spend with the Lord in prayer. It is God's desire to fellowship and commune with you.

**Sometimes when we pray, there will be resistance to our prayers. This is the devil coming against your prayers.**

But we must be persistent and not give up, remember that God hears your prayers, and the answer is on the way. Let's look at an example of this.

*Daniel 10:2-6, 12-14; "In those days I Daniel was mourning three full weeks. I ate no pleasant bread, neither came flesh nor wine in my mouth, neither did I anoint myself at all, till three whole weeks were fulfilled. And in the four and twentieth day of the first month, as I was by the side of the great river, which is Hiddekel; Then I lifted up mine eyes, and looked, and behold a certain man clothed in linen, whose lions were girded with fine gold of Uphaz: His body also was like the beryl, and his face as the appearance of lightning, and his eyes as lamps of fire, and his arms and his feet like in colour to polished brass, and the voice of his words like the voice of a multitude. Then said he unto me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that thou didst set thine heart to understand, and to chasten thyself before God, thy words were heard, and I am come for thy words. But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me one and twenty days: but, lo, Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me; and I remained there with the kings of Persia. Now I am come to make thee understand what shall befall thy people in the latter days: for yet the vision is for many days."*

From the very first day Daniel began to pray, God heard him and sent the answer. But the principalities and powers of the devil tried to stop the answer. Daniel did not give up until the answer came, and that is the way we need to be, we must press until we break through to God. The enemy does not want you to press into the presence of God. Look at what Jesus said along this line.

*Luke 18:1-8; "And he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; Saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine*

*adversary. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. And the Lord said, shall he find faith on the earth?) Hear what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? I tell you he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh,*

God wants us to be persistent in our prayers. And not waver in our faith.

**The reason the enemy does not what us to be persistent in prayer, is because many victories are won through prayer.** Paul tells us in

*Ephesians 6:12; "For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.*

That is why we must press into the Spirit because that is where the battle is, we must be constantly in prayer to know what the Spirit wants us to do, to know what God's will is in every situation.

The devil is cunning, he never rests, but is always plotting and planning and scheming to cause you to fail and fall. He will put snares and pitfalls in your path.

*1 Peter 5:8; "Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour.*

We are told back in

*Ephesians 6:13, "Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day.*

The way we take on the armor of God is by prayer.

*Ephesians 6:18; "Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit.*

Fellowship with God, so we will be strong when the attacks of the enemy come. When you are abiding in Jesus and being led by him, in tune to his voice, you will know his will.

**The devil will not be able to confuse, mislead, or deceive you,**



You will be strong in the Lord, and full of the Spirit of the living God. Prayer is a great weapon that God has given to you, and

**Prayer releases the fullness of the power, and God wants us to use this weapon to cover each other.**

Jesus gave us this example to illustrate the importance of prayer, and this shows us what the enemy desires to do to each of us. However there is power in prayer. Let us read,

*Luke 22:31-32; "And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.*

As you can clearly see, what Simon was going to go through possibly one of the hardest trials of his life. Jesus was praying for him because he, Jesus will keep them that come to him.

It says in

*Hebrews 7:25; "Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.*

The word intercession as used in this scripture means to pray, so this is saying that Jesus is praying for you, and this is what he wants us to do for each other.

*James 5:15; "Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another.*

*1 Timothy 2:1; "I Exhort there fore, that, first of all, supplication, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men.*

*Colossians 1:3; "We give thanks to God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Praying always for you.*

So let us always be in fervent prayer for each other, bearing each other's burdens. So far, we have looked at prayer that is spoken from our mouths, but we need to realize that prayer also comes from our hearts. Now **I want to look at another form of prayer**, prayer where we use our bodies to speak for us. **Fasting is a way that we speak or pray to God**, through the denial of certain things that we like or that we need, such as food, entertainment, fellowship with others, as well as other pleasures.

God may deal with you about many things, he may ask you to give up certain things that you like, so you can obtain more of him. Fasting is basically the humbling of yourself before God. Here is a great illustration of this, and how prayer moved the hand of God to save an entire town. Jonah was a man of God who was sent to Nineveh, to warn them that if they did not turn from their wicked ways, God was going to destroy them. Let us look at what they did.

***Jonah 3:5-10 "So the people of Nineveh believed God, and proclaimed a fast, and put on sackcloth, from the greatest of them even to the least of them. <sup>6</sup>For word came unto the king of Nineveh, and he arose from his throne, and he laid his robe from him, and covered him with sackcloth, and sat in ashes. <sup>7</sup>And he caused it to be proclaimed and published through Nineveh by the decree of the king and his nobles, saying, Let neither man nor beast, herd nor flock, taste any thing: let them not feed, nor drink water: <sup>8</sup>But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth, and cry mightily unto God: yea, let them turn every one from his evil way, and from the violence that is in their hands. <sup>9</sup>Who can tell if God will turn and repent, and turn away from his fierce anger, that we perish not? <sup>10</sup>And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way; and God repented of the evil, that he had said that he would do unto them; and he did it not."***

So, you can clearly see that fasting and prayer will move the heart of God to have mercy and compassion on others. The Lord has spoken to me many times and said for me to come to him in prayer and fasting. Fasting is a way of drawing closer to God, denying self to obtain more of God.

***James 4:9-10; "Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up."***

Fasting is speaking to God through our actions, by denying ourselves the things we need and want.

Now I would like to address the question of why some prayers are answered and others are not. First, we need to realize that God has his

will and things he wants to be done. When we go to him in prayer, if we ask him anything according to his will, he hears us.

*1 John 5:14-15; "And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask anything according to his will, he heareth us: And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.*

**When we ask for things that we know that he wants us to have it come to pass, and according to what he has said in his Word, we can ask in faith, knowing that we will receive.**

For instance, we know it is God's will to save lost souls. So, we can fervently pray for someone's salvation, and we know they will be saved, because it is God's will for them to be saved, even though the answer to that prayer may not be manifested for many years. We know it is God's will to heal, to deliver, and to set the captives free. When we ask God to move his hand, to heal or deliver others, we know that he will. If we are living a life of holiness and righteousness, we know that he hears our prayers.

*1 John 3:22; "And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight."*

**There are certain things that will hinder prayers also. The lack of faith will hinder our prayers, and if we have sin in our lives, it will hinder our faith.**

The sinful flesh is enmity against God. Therefore, if we yield ourselves to the desires of our flesh and do not walk in the Spirit, when the prayer of faith is needed, we will have a weak faith.

*James 1:6-7; "But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord.*

So, we clearly see the flesh and sin will hinder your prayers.

Asking the Lord for things just to please your fleshly desires is not always God's will.

*James 4:1-3; "From whence come wars and fighting's among you? Come they not hence, even of your lust that war in your members? Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: Ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not. Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lust.*

**So when you ask for things just to fulfill the lusts of your flesh, it is not in God's will. Also fighting, and arguing amongst yourselves with your brothers and sisters in the Lord isn't in God's will either. Fighting and arguing with your husband or wife will hinder your prayers.**

*1 Peter 3:7-8; "Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honor unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindered. Finally, be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pitiful, be courteous.*

So, you can see that fighting, and arguing will hinder our prayers. Why, because such fleshly conduct grieves the Holy Spirit of God, and this conduct is not pleasing to God.

One time, the disciples asked Jesus to teach them to pray. And Jesus gave them a prayer to use as a model, which we can also use when we pray. Let's take a look at it.

*Matthew 6:9-13; "After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, forever. Amen."*

Let's look at this scripture a bit more closely.

1. Always begin your prayer by **giving God honor and reverence**, (Our Father which art in heaven).
2. Then **praise and worship**, (Hallowed be thy name.)
3. **Submit yourself to his will**, (Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.)

4. **Make your request known to him,** tell him what you need,  
(Give us this day our daily bread.)
5. **Ask him to forgive you of your sins,** (And forgive us our debts.)
6. **Ask him to help you to forgive others,** (as we forgive our debtors.
7. **Ask him to protect you from evil,** to give you the strength to stand
8. Then **end your prayer with praise and worship** thanking him for everything he has done in your life.

This is just a model prayer and there is much variation to this. Seek God with all your heart and he will teach you what to pray about. Remember this one thing prayer is talking to God and Jesus. Enter into his presence every day with prayer.

**Some may say when they pray, that they don't feel his presence.**  
**When we enter into his presence by faith, his ears are always open unto the prayers of his people.**

**SECTION # 1**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 7**  
**SANCTIFICATION**

We will now move into another area of basic Bible doctrine, sanctification. Now to be **sanctified means to be separated for God**. But sanctification also means the process of being separated for God. There is a song that I heard one time (He Is Still Working on Me), and God is working on you too. You have not arrived yet to the place where God wants you to be. You're on a path, you are running a race, keeping the faith, but you are not there yet. The goal is to be like Jesus, to be a vessel, acceptable for the Master's, use. To make heaven your home. You must realize that you cannot do it by yourself, you need God's help. A good illustration of how God is working on us is found in.

*Jeremiah 18:1-6; "The word which came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, <sup>2</sup>Arise, and go down to the potter's house, and there I will cause thee to hear my words. <sup>3</sup>Then I went down to the potter's house, and, behold, he wrought a work on the wheels. <sup>4</sup>And the vessel that he made of clay was marred in the hand of the potter: so he made it again another vessel, as seemed good to the potter to make it. <sup>5</sup>Then the word of the LORD came to me, saying, <sup>6</sup>O house of Israel, cannot I do with you as this potter? saith the LORD. Behold, as the clay is in the potter's hand, so are ye in mine hand, O house of Israel."*

We are in God's hand. He is still working on us. He is transforming us and molding us little by little as we learn from his Word and follow the examples that Christ set for us. Sanctification is God's will for are lives, so we need to pursue it and allow the inward working of the Holy Spirit to continually teach, correct, and mold us, so that we will be presentable unto God.

**Sanctification is the continual process that the Holy Spirit is doing in our lives.**

Sanctification not only is having a relationship with God. It is also being set aside for God, so he can clean, teach, and reprove us.

Sanctification is the process that the Holy Ghost uses that keeps us in right standing with God.

**This process began when you accepted Christ into your heart and were born again by the Spirit of God!**

Look at it this way, when Jesus moved in, he started cleaning up all the things in your life that was not pleasing to him, and he is continually cleaning us, sanctifying us. This work began when you came to the cross of Calvary and it will continue until you go home to be with Christ.

**If the Holy Spirit were not continually working with us to keep us in line with Gods Word, his will for our lives, in no time at all we would go astray from God.**

If God were not involved in man's lives, in no time at all man would destroy himself. Jesus, who was God in the flesh, experienced all the weaknesses of man, so he understands that we need help in our walk, because there are so many temptations, snares, and pits that the devil uses to try to cause us to fall away. Jesus provided us with help. He himself said in

*John 15:4-5; "Abide in me and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing."*

We need the Spirit of God to continually work in our lives. Jesus is on your side, to help you make it to the Heavenly home that he has prepared for you. Sanctification can be compared to parents with their children. We begin to teach them when they are babies, we teach them what is right, what is wrong, and we teach them how to deal with hardships, and how to become responsible adults. We as God's children must learn to listen to, and allow the Holy Ghost to lead, guide, and teach us, so we can walk in the ways of the Lord.

Sanctification also means to conform, to be made more like Jesus Christ. Sanctification is the process that God uses through the Holy Ghost, and that is molding us into the image of Jesus Christ. We will never reach

our potential in Christ if we don't allow the Holy Ghost to teach us and correct us about those things in our lives that aren't pleasing to him.

The Holy Ghost is constantly sanctifying us for God's use, and God will continue to work on you all throughout your walk with him.

***1 Thessalonians 5:23; "And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."***

God wants to preserve you until the coming of his Son, by sanctifying you. The only way we can be preserved is by allowing the Spirit of God to purge us from all impurities.

If we harden our hearts to the reproof of the Holy Spirit as he sanctifies us, when he begins to deal with us about things in our lives not pleasing to him, if we don't lay it aside, our spiritual growth will stop. We will begin to fall away from God. Sometimes when the Spirit of God is sanctifying us, it doesn't always feel very good, but we must let the Lord do the work in us so we will be complete and not lacking in any good thing that the Lord has for us. Don't resist his work, yield yourself to him.

As I mentioned before, the process of sanctification began when you first came to Christ. Remember that Jesus washed you with his blood, and he gave his life by the offering of his body. Sanctification cannot be done by any other means. It was brought about by the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. This is when the process begins in you when you were washed in the blood.

***Hebrews 10:10; "By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all."***

Well, when Jesus ascended back up to heaven to be with the Father, he sent the Holy Ghost to continue the process. In

***John 17:17; "Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth."***

Jesus began to do a work in your life, and he will continue to do a work by the Holy Ghost. When you came to Jesus, he forgave you of all your sins, but you are a long way from being what he wants you to be, so he is still working on you.

First, he will clean up one area of your life, and then he will start on another. Slowly molding and shaping you into the image of Christ.



Jesus through the Holy Ghost is getting us ready for his imminent coming. No matter how many mistakes you make he will not push you away but will continue to work on you.

*Psalm 94:18; "When I said, My foot slippeth; thy mercy, O LORD, held me up."*

We must go on with the Lord. Sometimes it is hard for us to let go of bad habits. That is when the Holy Ghost will take the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God, and he will begin to **cut away things in our lives**. It may hurt, but for everything he cuts away he gives us something of himself.

*John 15:2; "Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit."*

He will cut away things in our lives that are not producing the fruits of Godliness, things like fleshly attitudes, anger, and bitterness.

Jesus by the Holy Ghost will help us to bring into captivity every thought that exalts itself against God.

**The Holy Ghost cleaning you up by the process of sanctification,**

So that you can have a right relationship with God. It is not always an easy process,

**But we have to hang in there and keep going on because we know that it is for our own good.**

God is also molding us by the Word and the Holy Ghost into vessels he can use for his glory, how long it takes depends on us.

You can be a useful vessel in a short period of time if you will allow the Holy Ghost to work in you the process of sanctification. Or if you resist him, it can take a long time. I have seen some that have been serving God for many years and have accomplished little for God. God is willing to use you if you are willing to yield yourself to him. So many will not allow the Spirit of God to sanctify them, they want to hold on to unclean habits, and they want to hold on to the sinful pleasures of this world. But God said to let it all go. The Spirit of God wants to sanctify you so you will be ready when Jesus comes back after his bride, pure, white, clean, as a bride adorned for her groom.

***1 Corinthians 6:11; "...but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God."***

Look at what it said, the Spirit of God sanctifies us. He will totally transform you, and Paul said that we become new creatures in Christ Jesus.

The reason that God wants us to be changed is to become like Jesus is, because he was obedient to the Father in all things. Jesus walked in total obedience to the will of God, and God used him in a mighty way.

***1 John 3:8; "For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil."***

Jesus could destroy the works of the devil because the devil had nothing on him. And the only way God can truly use you is if you allow him to remove the things that are robbing you of the power that God wants to give you.

You must allow the Holy Ghost to cleanse you from all the things in your life that are not pleasing to him. You cannot destroy the works of the devil in other people's lives if you allow the devil to hang around in yours.

It is God's will for every believer to be set aside, to become useful vessels for God. But the only way we can be acceptable to God, is if we allow the Holy Ghost to continually correct, reprove and cleanse our lives.

In the world we live in, there are the constant temptations that are trying to pull us away from Jesus Christ. The work of sanctification is to keep us in a right relationship with Jesus Christ and the Father God Almighty. The flesh is sinful by nature, and that is why it must be brought into subjection to the Spirit of God. The flesh must be denied and crucified.

The Apostle Paul struggled with the flesh. Let's look at,

***Romans 7:14-15,17-20; "For we know that the law is spiritual; but I am carnal, (fleshly) sold under sin. For that which I do I allow not; for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I", "Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. For I know that in***

*me (that is in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. For the good that I would I do not: but the evil, which I would not, that I do. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me."*

If ever there was a man used of God that was Paul, and yet Paul spoke of all the struggles that we must face every day. He, spoke of the flesh against the Spirit of God. The nature of sin is always present with us, because of the fall of Adam in the Garden of Eden, and because of his fall, we were all made sinners. That is why some who have served God for many years can do sinful things, they mess up and fall away from God. Jesus understands the struggles we face every day and that is why when he left, he sent another to strengthen, comfort and keep us. The other comforter is the Holy Ghost.

If it, was not for the Holy Ghost keeping us, correcting, reproofing us, teaching us the truth, and doing the work of sanctification in us, in no time at all, we would lose the ability to discern right from wrong.

The devil is the master of deception, and the father of lies. Multitudes of people are deceived, because they do not have the Spirit of truth living within them. The Holy Ghost is here to keep us from deception. Without the Holy Ghost you are no match for the devil, he will deceive you, and you will believe his lies and will be damned for all eternity. But if you will-heed the Holy Ghost he will keep your feet on the path of truth, but without him, you would be in trouble in no time at all. The Holy Ghost will help us to keep focused on what God wants us to be, and on his will for our life. Look at,

*2 Corinthians 3:18; "But we all, with open face behold as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord."*

The Holy Ghost is always showing us what we can be, showing us the Glory of God.

**So, we may catch a vision of how God wants us to be, mature, spirit filled, full of the Glory of God, children of the most high.**

He is constantly giving us a vision of the Glory and the holiness of God, so that we don't lose sight of where we are going, or what we have been called to do. Looking at what the scripture said, it said that,

**He is changing us into the same image, the image of Christ for the Glory of God.**

Changing us into the vision he gives us by the Spirit of the Lord. We are changed from glory to glory, God is continually working on us by the Holy Ghost. The whole process of sanctification is for one reason, so that you can inherit the Kingdom of God, so that you can make it, and be with him in his Kingdom. God wants you to be with him around his throne, worshipping and glorifying him forever.

Let's come to the conclusion of this chapter on sanctification. I believe the process of sanctification can be summed up in two scriptures out of

***Ephesians 5:26-27; "That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish."***

So, no matter what happens, no matter how many mistakes you make or faults that you have, keep going on with Jesus.

**SECTION # 1**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 8**  
**RIGHTEOUSNESS**

In this chapter of the bible study, we are going to learn about righteousness. God has spoken to me many times and told me to WALK IN HOLINESS AND RIGHTEOUSNESS, to do so, striving to be righteousness must become a style of life. It is not achieved over night, but it must be followed after it with all your heart. God has also spoken to me many times saying,

**"NO MAN SHALL ENTER INTO THE KINGDOM OF GOD WITHOUT HOLINESS AND RIGHTEOUSNESS."**

We will not make heaven our home without these qualities. Let us look at righteousness, and how to obtain it. The first thing we want to establish, is that God is righteous.

*Psalm 119:137,142,144: 137; " Righteous art thou, O Lord, and upright are thy judgments." 142; "Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and thy law is the truth." 144; "The righteousness of thy testimonies is everlasting; give me understanding, and I shall live."*

If we will accept the understanding of the righteousness of God, we shall live, for God is righteous. Everything that God does or allows is for a reason. Many times we may have questions as to why certain things happen. But we must realize that everything that God allows to happen is working for the good of his people.

*Isaiah 55: 8-9; "For my thoughts are not your thoughts. Neither are your ways my ways, saith the Lord. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts."*

So, we do not always understand why God allows things to happen to some, and not to others. The one thing we do know is that in everything he does, he is righteous. Righteousness is a part of his characteristics, it is a part of his nature, and there is no righteousness outside of him.

Many times we may think that we are good and righteous. It may be a hard thing for you to receive, but righteousness comes from God, and not you.

**You don't have righteousness outside of God.**

It belongs to God; it is part of him and proceeds from him. Anything we do outside of God is unrighteousness, and all unrighteousness is sin.

***1 John 5:17; "All unrighteousness is sin."***

So outside of God we are sinful. Outside of God we do not have the characteristics of righteousness. So, for us to be righteous, or obtain righteousness, we must abide in God through his Son Jesus Christ.

Now there are some good people that have done some really good deeds, but if the good things that a person does are used to draw attention to them, for them to receive praise, have credit given to, or to be exalted, even though what the person did was a good thing, it is still unrighteousness.

**God will not share his Glory, Praise, and Worship with any person!**

Righteousness is anything and everything we do to exalt and Glorify God, to bring him Glory! When we came to Jesus Christ and accepted him as our Lord, that brought Glory to God, and that was a righteous act.

***Isaiah 64:5-6; "Thou meetest him that rejoiceth and worketh righteousness, those that remember thee in thy ways."***

It says, he that works righteousness are those that remember God.

***6; "But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousness are as filthy rags."***

Those who remember and give honor to God in all their ways and give thanks to him in everything that they do are righteous in the sight of God. Righteousness is exalting God in everything we do. Unrighteousness is anything we do to exalt ourselves.

***John 7:18; "He that speaketh of himself seeketh his own glory, but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him."***

Anyone who seeks to bring Glory to themselves is in unrighteous. There are three classes of sin in the world:

1. PRIDE
2. LUST
3. REBELLION

The Devil has used all three of these sins to draw man away from Christ, and all three of these sins are applied if we exalt self. When a person who does not know God does a good deed, they do it because it gives them a good feeling. So, in reality their motive was out of pride.

**Everything that we do should bring Glory to God, not ourselves.**

If we give a bag of groceries to someone with intent to draw attention to ourselves, then we did it with the wrong intention. The act in it self was righteous, but the intention it was given in was unrighteous. If we do it to glorify and to exalt God, then God is pleased.

***Matthew 6:1-6; "Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly. And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men, Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly."***

We should never do anything to be seen of men, or to receive glory from men. If we receive glory for the things we do, we rob the glory from God.

***Isaiah 48:11; "I will not give my glory to another."***

I remember one time that I had done something for the church, and I thought to myself, you deserve to be compensated for your labors. At that very moment, the Spirit of God spoke to me and said, "do you want to be rewarded in this life or the next?" If we receive glory now, will we receive glory later? NO!

Jesus never did anything to exalt himself, he only wanted to exalt God.

***Luke 18:18-19; "And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good, save one, that is, God."***

Everything you do, do it to bring Glory to God, just like Jesus did.

If you noticed everything the Pharisee's did, they did to be seen of men. Even though they knew the law and were elders and leaders of the people they wanted to be exalted, to be praised. They did things to make themselves look good in the eyes of others.

We should not seek praise from people, but we should always give it to God. You must remember that you are his creation, he is the Lord, not you, and you are nothing without him.

***Romans 3: 10; "There is none righteous, no, not one."***

You can do nothing without him. You are lost and on your way to hell without him.

**When we do things to exalt God, and when the intention of our actions is to give Glory to God, we are walking in righteousness.**

Only through God do we have the ability to be righteous. Only through God do we have the ability to love the ungodly, to reach out with compassion and mercy to the sinful. God gives us the ability to do good works with the right motives. Jesus told the people to keep the law that the Pharisees taught them, but not to do according to their deeds. Jesus recognized that the things they did were good, but with the wrong motives. Jesus looked past their outward appearance, which appeared righteous, he



looked into their hearts and saw their hypocrisy, that they sought self-glory.

*1 Samuel 12:7; "Now therefore stand still, that I may reason with you before the Lord of all the righteous acts of the Lord, which he did to you and to your fathers."*

I want to refer back to what I was talking about in the beginning of this chapter. God is righteous, and everything God does is righteous.

*Psalms 145:17; "The Lord is righteous in all his ways, and holy in all his works."*

You might ask why is God righteous in all his ways? Everything written in the bible, everything God desires to do is to help us to live a godly, holy, righteous life, to serve and follow him, to be a part of his kingdom forever, to dwell in his presence forever!

You might ask, when we do things that bring him glory, how is that helping us to serve him? When we learn to give him glory in all things, it teaches us to reverence, honor, and to humble ourselves to him.

When we praise and worship him, it brings us into his presence, so that we may learn to fellowship, to commune and sup with him. Prayer, worship, and giving him Glory brings us closer to him, and the closer to him we get, the more of his nature we obtain. The closer we get to him, the more we will be like him, and the more of his righteousness will flow from us to others.

God created man in his image, and put his Spirit in him, but man was separated from God because of sin. So, for us to be able to live with God in his kingdom, we must be transformed into his image. The only way we can be like him is to walk with him and learn of his love and his nature. The closer you get to God, the more you will love him. Long for him and thirst for him, because the more of God you get, the more of him you will want.

God spoke something to me awhile back that was very interesting, he said "I WILL NOT FAIL MANKIND, I WILL NOT FAIL THEM THAT LOVE ME."

**Everything that God is doing is for the salvation of his people, that is why all his ways are righteous.**

He will not withhold any good thing from those that love him. Why is exalting and glorifying self, unrighteousness, because it will draw us away from God. Anything that draws attention to self is unrighteousness.

There are religions that teach that we are gods, that man is a god, and we have inward power. Any religion that exalts man is false. Any belief that worships or gives praise to man instead of the Creator, is a false religion. All these religions do, is draw us away from the one and only true God, the Lord God Jehovah, and his Son Jesus Christ.

Even though we are sinful by nature, we have been given the opportunity to obtain the righteousness of God, by turning to God through his Son Jesus Christ. Once you surrender your life over to Christ, and begin to take on the nature of God, you obtain his righteousness. We obtain the righteousness of God through Christ Jesus. Let us look at a man that the bible said was righteous, and let's study about how he obtains that righteousness.

***Genesis 12:1-4; "Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee. And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing. And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee, and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed. So Abram departed as the Lord had spoken unto him;"***

Abram lived in a land that was full of idol and pagan worship. The first thing that God did was to tell Abram to come out from them and Abram obeyed God. If Abram had had any doubt concerning the promises that God had given him, would he have obeyed? Abram obeyed God because he believed.

***Hebrews 11:8; "By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went."***

***Romans 4:20-22; "He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; And***

*being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform. And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.”*

**Why was it imputed to him for righteousness? Because he believed and obeyed, and in doing so, he gave glory to God.**

So, the first step to being righteous before God is to come out of the world, and to not take part of the sinfulness in the world. Turn to Jesus with your whole heart.

*2 Corinthians 6:17-18; "Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; And I will receive you, And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.”*

The second step is to believe what God has said to us in his Word, that he is who he says he is, and that he will do what he says he will do.

*Hebrews 11:6; "For he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.”*

Now let's look at.

*Hebrews 6:17-18; "Wherein God, willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath: That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us:”*

Notice what is said in verse 18 (who have fled), we have fled, and separated ourselves from the world. We have surrendered ourselves to Christ, laying hold upon the hope that has been set before us. What is our hope? The promises that God has given to us in his Word.

**We are heirs therefore we have the right to have access to the treasures of God, his characteristics, attributes, nature, and his righteousness.**

The third is to be obedient to his leadership. When we obey him, it draws us closer to him and brings him Glory. Disobedience separates us from God, and it grieves his Spirit. Let us look at,

*Romans 2:8-9; "But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath,*

***Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile.”***

In the scripture, it is saying that unrighteousness is the opposite of the truth. So, if we obey the truth (which is in Jesus Christ), then we are obedient unto righteousness.

**We obtain righteousness by believing in Jesus Christ, and by giving Glory to God in every area of our lives.**

Everything we do should bring Glory to God,

***Matthew 5:14-16; "Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.***

In everything you do, when you reach out to minister to people in their needs, do it so that they may see the love of God in you, and give glory to God. As you reach out in love with a humble, meek spirit, the love of God will draw them to salvation, and faith in our Lord Jesus Christ. God acknowledged his people as a nation, they had exalted him, but when they fasted, they did it in an unrighteous way.

***Isaiah 58:4; "Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high.”***

They were fasting with the wrong motives, the act in itself was righteous, but they did it in an unrighteous manner. Because they sought to be heard for the wrong reasons, God tells them what needed to be done to get them back in line with his righteousness. God wanted them to fast with a humble, meek spirit, reaching out to others to help them. If we do it to bring glory to God, then our righteousness will go before us, and God will be our rewarder. Exalt God in everything you do. The world operates in selfish, prideful ways, always looking for ways to exalt self. God has called us to be humble and meek even as Christ is, and then we shall walk in righteousness before him.

**SECTION # 1**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 9**  
**HOLINESS**

We now come to another characteristic that God will require of us, and that is Holiness. Without it, no one will enter the Kingdom of God.

**You don't hear much about holiness in the church of today, but it is still a requirement if you are planning to make heaven your home.**

If you are going to make heaven your home, if you are going to be ready when Jesus comes back to take his people home, then you must walk in holiness. Holiness is not part of our human characteristics it comes from God. It is not something you put on or off but must be a lifestyle. Some may think that holiness is obtained by the way a person dresses, or by the way they act and talk.

**Holiness is only obtained by a relationship with God through his Son Jesus Christ.**

God has told me many times, that none will enter his Kingdom without holiness and righteousness.

*Hebrews 12:14 "Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord."*

God has called us to live a life of holiness,

*1 Thessalonians 3:8; "For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness."*

Now we know that every man will see God when they stand before him to be judged. God wants us to be worthy when we are presented to him by his Son Jesus Christ.

*Ephesians 5:14; "That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish."*

God is looking for those who are hungry for holiness, willing to walk in holiness before him.

But we must realize that holiness is not something we produce in ourselves, but it comes from God.

Holiness comes from God, and the only way to obtain holiness is to get in him, holiness is a characteristic of God. And when we get in God, we will also exhibit this characteristic.

*2 Peter 1:3-4, According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue: Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.*

**So, we need to realize that holiness is not something we possess, but it comes directly from God.**

*1 Samuel 2:2; "There is none holy as the Lord:"*

God is holy, Jesus said in

*Rev 3:7; "These things saith he that is holy, he that is true."*

Now the Bible tells us that when we accept Jesus as our Savior, that we are grafted into the root, which is Christ.

*Romans 11:16; "For if the first fruit be holy, the lump is also holy, and if the root be holy, so are the branches."*

**So, when we get grafted into Jesus, his goodness and holiness flow into us as we partake of him.**

Anyone who has not accepted Jesus as his or her Savior, will not have this characteristic of holiness. The bible tells us that we will know God's children by the fruit they bear or yield.

When we abide in Christ, holiness comes naturally, and the way we abide in him is by being transformed.

*Romans 12:1-2; "I Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind.*

So, for us to be partakers of his holiness, we must be changed into his image. This began when we gave our hearts to Jesus. And the closer we draw to him the more we will be like him.

You must remember that you are a vessel of God and the Spirit of God dwells in you and that Spirit is holy.

**So, if you will allow the Spirit of God to flow through you, holiness will emanate from you, as God is reflected in you.**

We must not allow sinful things to come into our lives that grieve that Holy Spirit. The very fact that holiness comes from God signifies that holiness means to be without sin.

Now we know that we have a sinful nature because of Adam, so we must crucify our flesh, we must say no to sinful things, and sinful desires. If we allow ourselves to be dictated to and controlled by our flesh, the holiness in our lives will be very tiny, if there is any at all.

***Romans 8:5,8 "For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. "So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God."***

The flesh is enmity against the things of God. Holiness is from God, therefore, if we are ruled by the lust and desires of our flesh, it will war against the Spirit of God, and against the holiness that flows to you from God. Holiness will come only as we walk in dedication and obedience to him to be holy means that we cannot play with or walk in the ways of the world.

We cannot allow the devil to put us under bondage by his schemes, or by his snares. We must walk in victory above the flesh, the world, and the devil. The devil will tell you that it is OK to do sinful things but if we are going to walk in holiness we cannot give in to the temptation.

**Holiness must become your life style, and you must live it daily.**

Holiness comes by serving God with all our hearts, putting him first in everything. Living a life of holiness is living a life where we do not willfully do things that are sinful, and the only way this can happen, is by having the nature of God in us. The way we get God's nature, is by partaking of God, drawing holiness from him through his Son Jesus Christ. We must walk in the Spirit of God, by having our minds continually on the things of God, meditating on him and his goodness, by continually communing and having fellowship with him with our spirit.

Also, pray without ceasing, constantly seeking to serve in any capacity you can, striving to please him in all things. If we would seek to please God in every area of our lives, then when we are tempted, we will do nothing to hurt or grieve him.

**It is God's will for us to be holy.**

He is continually working on us to draw us to him, so that we can obtain more of his nature. Some may say it is impossible to live a life of holiness because of our sinful natures, but the one thing you must remember, you are replacing your nature with God's nature.

Jesus was tempted at all points but sinned not. He was flesh, this is pointed out in

***Romans 1:3-4; "Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh. And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness."***

Jesus was flesh just like us, but he had a nature about him, the spirit of holiness. This nature proved him to be the Son of God, and we who are joint heirs with Christ can have this spirit of holiness also. We have been grafted into the root therefore we are partakers of his holiness.

I mentioned earlier that holiness means to be without sin. The enemy has caused a lot of confusion in this area. As humans, we make many mistakes and errors, have faults and shortcomings, and the devil will condemn us over them. But we must remember that we serve a loving, merciful and compassionate God, who sees and knows our weaknesses and forgives us the moment we ask him to. But the enemy will condemn us, so we will become discouraged, and we will begin to doubt God, and lose our measure of faith, which is sin.

Sin is when we do something we know is wrong and continue to do it anyway.

***James 4:17; "Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin."***

Even when we are walking in holiness, we will make mistakes and still have faults.

But we should not willingly sin and do things we know are wrong.



**When we are walking in holiness, sin will not come naturally,**

Sin is always conceived in the mind first, then brought about when we commit that thought. Sometimes you may do something without thinking, and then realize it was wrong. That is not sin, that is a mistake, and God forgives us of our mistakes, because he knows the intent of our hearts. He understands that we did not willingly do wrong.

When you have the nature of God in you, you do not go around sinning.

*1 John 3:5-9; "And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin. Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him. Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous. He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God."*

Once we get in Christ, and Christ gets in us, we will not go around sinning willfully. We begin to exhibit his character and his holiness, we become one with him, and his holiness becomes part of you.

*2Corinthians 7:1; "Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God."*

The scripture clearly tells us to move toward holiness, and the to do that is found in the verses the pervious chapter.

*2 Corinthians 6: 16-18; "... I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. <sup>17</sup>Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, <sup>18</sup>And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty."*

**We can be perfected in holiness by the Spirit of God that dwells in us,**

And the way he dwells in us, is by keeping ourselves clean from the things of the world. Do not partake of the uncleanness of the world and

your flesh, and touch not sinful unclean things. Commit your life to God, become one with him and you will obtain his holiness. Let the Spirit of holiness cleanse you from all unholiness. God is always working on you, to perfect your life to obtain holiness.

As you grow and learn God's ways, you will receive more of his nature, you will learn to walk in reverence and fear, knowing that without God, you have no holiness.

**Without holiness, you will not enter into the Kingdom of God.**

There will be times that God will correct us, but we must remember that whatever we go through, is for our own good.

*1 Thessalonians 3:13; "To the end he may establish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God."*

God is working on us, so we can be holy even as he is holy.

*1 Peter 1:15-16; "But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation; Because it is written, be ye holy, for I am holy."*

God is holy, and you can be to!

**SECTION # 1**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 10**  
**GODLINESS**

We now come to the last lesson in this section of the study. And even though not much is mentioned in the bible about Godliness, it is still important to us. We are commanded in the word to follow after Godliness.

**1 Timothy 6:11 ( But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.)**

As you can see Godliness is in good company. And I believe it is required of us as Christians. Without it we will not inherit the Kingdom of God. The meaning of Godliness is described in many different ways varying from, being devoted to God, having a good attitude, having the fear of God, to doing what is pleasing to God. But I believe that Godliness means much more than just that, it means being like God. Having the characteristics of God.

**So, if we are going to understand Godliness we must look at God and his characteristics.**

His character the way he views things, his way of doing things.

We as Christians are commanded in the word to exhibit Godliness in our characters. Jesus who was God in flesh exhibited the character of God in everything he did. And According to the word those who are in Christ will also. It will be our nature.

**Romans 11:16 ( For if the firstfruit be holy the lump is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches.)**

**Is it not the desire of us all to be more like Christ in everything we do? After all he is our example and we are to pattern are lives after him.**

We should desire to exhibit his character in our lives. Not so we can be equal to him or greater than him, but so we can serve him better. This was Satan's sin pride. He desired to be like God so he could exalt himself over God.

***Isaiah 14:12-15 (How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit.)***

Every person that has been born or will be born is born with the characteristics of God. Because the spirit that comes to live in every one of us comes from God and gives us his character.

That is why children are so precious. Children who are sweet and loving exhibit the characteristics of God in the way they forgive and are loving to others. Excepting and trusting other no matter what. Jesus himself said that we must become as a child.

***Matthew 18: 3-4 (Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.***

Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.)

Even though we are born with godly characteristics we soon become sinful because of our sinful nature and the fact that we live in a sinful world, where the Prince of the air is Satan.

We turn away from Godliness and we began to take on the nature of Satan. What a shame it is to see an innocent child corrupted by sin. This is exactly what Satan like to do, to corrupt the innocent.

***Proverbs 6: 26 (For by means of a whorish woman a man is brought to a piece of bread: and the adulteress will hunt for the precious life.)***

See how Satan uses sin to bring a precious life down to nothing. We are all born as loving, caring, tender, humble souls. But after sin enters in we become hateful, angry, bitter, prideful and lost.

But even though we live in a sinful world you can look around and still see God in the lives of many people. Even in some of the most

hardened sinners. The Bible clearly states that every good thing comes from God.

***James 1:17 (Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.)***

We can see God's character all around us because you see all the things in life that make life worth living comes from God.

Love, joy, peace, happiness, contentment, gentleness, goodness, all these come from God. And he gives these to all man.

***Matthew 5:45 (he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.)***

God is good to all people he gives his love to all man.

And without Godliness in the world life would not be worth living. Everything in life that makes life worth living comes from God. Man is the object of God's love and affection; he has given unto man everything that we need to live.

***2 Peter 1:3 (According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue.)***

God is calling us to come back to our roots, back to Godliness.

Once you come to Christ. You must turn from Ungodliness and begin to display God's nature in your lives. But it seems that no matter how much we desire to show forth the nature of God, every now and then ungodly character popup.

Even though we are born with godly character, as we grow ungodly the world and Satan sow character into us. A good example would be taking two batches of seed one good and one bad then mix them together. It would be impossible to tell the good from the bad. And it would be impossible to separate them. Even though we are all born with good seed in us. As we go through life bad seeds were sowed into us, that is why we display good and bad characteristics.

When we come to Christ, he will begin to clean out the bad. Now before God can cleans us of bad seeds, he must bring them to the surface so we can deal with them. And once these ungodly characters surface if

we will ask God to help us to overcome, he will. God what us to yield good fruit, to be like him. To treat others the way he would. The closer we get to him, and the longer we serve him the more we will be like him.

**As we grow in Christ the more we will display the characteristics of Godliness.**

And this should be are desire to more and more like Christ. This was the apostle Paul desire.

*Philippians 3:10-14 (That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death; If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead. Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus. Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.)*

Paul desired to be like Jesus, he strived to be more like Christ. And that should be our desire also. The Bible clearly tells us that if we continue to abide in Christ, we will show forth the characteristics of Godliness.

*Romans 11:16 (For if the firstfruit be holy, the lump is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches.)*

Let us now look at some of the characteristic of God. As I prepared this lesson one thing that the spirit kept bringing to me is that God is our father.

And he has a fatherly character. Jesus was constantly referring to God as father. Because he is our heavenly father, and he expresses his fatherly characteristics in everything he does. In the very beginning when God created everything, he did it so his people would be taken care of. When he created Adam and Eve, he put them in a garden were everything they needed was supplied. He is a provider for his people. He takes pleasure in providing for his people.

*Philippians 4:19 (But my God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus.)*

And as Christians God expects us also to provide for those, he has brought into our lives.

*1 Timothy 5:8 (But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.)*

A part of being a provider is being responsible. This is part of Gods nature being responsible for his own. This is expressed all through the scriptures, how he is concerned about his people.

*Luke 12:32 (Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.)*

Not only is God responsible to provide for his people but all so he fills responsible for their actions. In the very beginning after Adam and Eve was drove out of the garden. And man began to multiply,

**God looked down and seen the wickedness of man and repented, because he felt responsible for their actions.**

This fatherly characteristic was also seen in Job.

*Job 1:1-5 (There was a man in the land of Uz, whose name was Job; and that man was perfect and upright, and one that feared God, and eschewed evil. And there were born unto him seven sons and three daughters. His substance also was seven thousand sheep, and three thousand camels, and five hundred yoke of oxen, and five hundred she asses, and a very great household; so that this man was the greatest of all the men of the east. And his sons went and feasted in their houses, every one his day; and sent and called for their three sisters to eat and to drink with them. And it was so, when the days of their feasting were gone about, that Job sent and sanctified them, and rose up early in the morning, and offered burnt offerings according to the number of them all: for Job said, It may be that my sons have sinned, and cursed God in their hearts. Thus did Job continually.)*

Job felt responsible for his children.

**This characteristic can also be seen in intercessor prayer warriors. Being burdened with the responsibility for others sins.**

Jesus exhibited this characteristic when he took the sins of the world on himself and died on the cross.

So even as God the father was responsible for others, we should to. Feeling responsible for the actions of others is a characteristic of Godliness.

Another characteristic of Godliness is being **diligent**, even as God is. God is neither lazy nor slothful.

*Psalm 121:3b-4 (he that keepeth thee will not slumber.*

*Behold, he that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep.)*

I touched on this earlier in the lesson but let us examine how this applies to us. We know that the heart of God is lost souls. And if you look through the eyes of God you see a world lost and dying and going to hell. And you must realize that you need to diligent in your labors for Christ, to bring in the harvest. Jesus himself expressed the importance of being diligent, he said in

**John 4: 35 (Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest.**

**We have been called to be laborers together with Christ.**

God was a worker; he labored six days then rested the seventh. God understands that these bodies of flesh get tired and need rest. The bible clearly tells us that there will come a time of rest for God's people, but it is not now. Jesus tells us in,

*John 9:4 (I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.)*

We are also told to redeem the time for the days are evil. God expects use to labor **diligently** for him. We have all been given a certain amount of time here on this earth and in the end the only thing that will matter will be what we have did for God. There are certain people that can only be reach by you. If you don't serve God and labor, they will perish.

This brings us to another characteristic of Godliness, **faithfulness**. Our God is a faithful God, and all that are abiding in Christ will be also. In a world where it seems that every body's nature is unfaithfulness, but you can count on God. It says in,



*Hebrews 13: 8 ( Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.)*

It also says in,

**James 1: 17 ( with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.)**

He will be faithful in everything he has spoken to us. We are told in his word to look to Christ in everything, and not at people, because people will let you down. God is a faithful God, and he expects his people to be also.

If people cannot rely on your faithfulness, your ministry will never amount to anything. All down through the bible you can see God's faithfulness to his people. There are a lot of examples in the bible; they have been recorded for our edification. As a disciple of Christ, we are to pattern our lives after him, and there was no unfaithfulness in him. As ministers you will give account to God. If you have been faithful, you will hear these words, welcome in my good and faithful servant.

**SECTION # 2**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 11**  
**GROWING IN CHRIST**

Now that you have studied several lessons on the basics of Christianity, let's move on into other teachings that will benefit you in your walk with God. We will begin at a simple level first, and then we will move deeper into the Word. As I had stated in one of the above lessons, there is no time when you are not in God's hand. He said in

***Hebrews 13:5; "I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee."***

He will be with you always, even to the very end. Sometimes it feels like he is not with you, but we don't walk by our feelings, we walk by faith. We don't always understand God, but we know that he always has our best interests in mind.

***Jeremiah 29:11; "For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, saith the Lord, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end."***

God has a plan for your life. Maybe you have been serving God for only a few weeks, several years, or for your whole life. Whatever the case, God has plans for your life, plans to use you for his service. We do not see all of the future, but God does. He does not see us the way we ourselves, but he sees a finished vessel, complete and fit to be used in his service.

There is a potential in God you can reach, and God desires that you reach that potential in him, He knows your capabilities and talents.

The sad truth is most people never achieve their full potential in God, but they allow the enemy to discourage and stop them.

But you can reach that potential if you determine in your heart that you are going to achieve your best for God. It says in,

***Proverbs 29:18; "Where there is no vision, the people perish."***

Catch a vision of God's plan for your life, and in doing so it will give you the zeal you need to achieve your potential. When God brought the children of Israel out of Egypt's bondage, he gave them a vision of a land flowing with milk and honey, a land they could call their own.

You might say that you don't know what God's will is for your life, you haven't received that vision yet. In the chapter on prayer, you learned how to go before the Throne of God, so go to your heavenly Father and ask him.

***"Father, show me your will for my life, what are your plans concerning me, the works of my hands, and my life."***

The word says in

***1 John 5:14-15; "And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask anything according to his will, he heareth us. And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petition that we desired of him."***

It is not God's will for us to walk around in the dark, because we are children of light. Well according to the scripture, if we ask according to his will, he hears us, and answers. Is it God's will for us to know what his plan for our life is? Yes!

***Isaiah 45:11; "Thus saith the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, and his Maker. Ask me of things to come concerning my sons, and concerning the work of my hands command ye me."***

God wants to show you his will for your life, so you will catch the vision of his will for your life, and this vision will carry you through the hard times. Get a vision of what you can accomplish in Christ, you can lay hands on the sick and they will recover, you can cast out devils.

You can preach the gospel, and you can teach God's Word. Every promise in the Word applies to you because you are a child of the most-high God. In the book of,

***2 Corinthians 1:20; "For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God by us."***

The word "amen" as used here means that his promises for you are a done deal according to God's Word.

There will be times in your walk with God, that he will use you to heal the sick, to bring deliverance to others, and to minister to people. But soon you will find out, that it takes more to lay your hands on the blind eyes and see them open. You must realize,

**To have God's mighty miracle working power in its' fullness, there is a price to be paid.**

God spoke this to me when I was young in the Lord, he told me many have desired to have the miracle working power, but **very few have paid the price.** God wants you to have this power, he wants to anoint you with a powerful anointing so you can do great and mighty things in the name of his Son, Jesus Christ. God will only give his power to those he trusts, those who are mature and have stood in the face of trials, testing and temptations.

The Apostle Peter was given the power to do great and mighty works along with the other eleven disciples early in his ministry.

But there were no significant miracles accredited to him until after he had matured and had been tested and tried.

Even though he failed some of the tests, he kept on going. Then, when the Holy Ghost gave him power from on high, God began to use him to perform the miraculous. He had stood through the test, he had paid the price, and God knew he could trust him.

In the natural world, you might compare the power of God to a powerful automobile. You know that it is impossible for a baby to drive such a powerful machine. You would not let a child drive either, you would only let those that have showed you that they are mature enough to handle it safely, because you know that they would hurt themselves and others. Well God wants us to mature, so that we can be a channel for his power without hurting others.

**God wants us to learn to minister, using his power to bring life to his people, not death.**

You must realize that this power that God wants to give you is the same kind of power he used to create all things. There is life and death in this power, and God does not want us to use it to bring death and condemnation.

**He wants us to use his power to minister with love and life to a hurting world, healing lives, healing hearts, and restoring hope, reaching out with love and compassion to a lost and dying world.**

Jesus said in Matthew 10:8; "...freely ye have received, freely give." Use his power to set people free from the bondage's (yokes) in their lives. Many people are under the yoke of the devil, but God wants to break the yoke of sin by his power.

***Isaiah 10:27; "...and the yoke shall be destroyed because of the anointing."***

Jesus was anointed with this power,

***Acts 10:38; "How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him."***

Jesus paid a price for the anointing we will get into that in the next lesson of the bible study. After he had paid the price, God anointed him so he could bring life to the spiritually dead, to set people free, and to heal.

***Luke 4:18-19; "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord."***

God wants you to have this power also; this chapter of the study is to give you a basic understanding on how to obtain this power.

Let us now go into the first stage, to prepare you for God's use. (Growth or maturity). When you came to know Jesus as your Savior and accepted his gift of salvation through repentance and believing, you were born again, and this is known as regeneration. When Jesus told this to Nicodemus, he could not understand how this could happen. Let us read this account in the gospel.

***John 3:1-7; "There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? Jesus***

*answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water (Word) and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again."*

This new birth is by the Spirit of God, it happens to the inward man. Paul said in

*2 Corinthians 5:17; "Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away: behold, all things are become new."*

You have become a new person, a newborn baby in the Lord. In the natural and in the spiritual you are totally dependent on Christ, you must depend upon Jesus for everything. You do not have the strength to walk on your own. Jesus said in

*John 15:5; "...without me ye can do nothing."*

As a baby you must go to him in everything and draw from his strength. As a baby in the Lord, you are weak and vulnerable to the devil, the sinful nature in you will be constantly trying to pull you back into sin. Listen to what Jesus said in

*2 Corinthians 12:9; "My grace is sufficient for thee; for my strength is made perfect in weakness."*

Jesus understands that you need his strength to stand, so he reaches out to you in love (grace) and gives you the ability to stand. We must draw strength from him everyday. This is why a prayer life is necessary and spending time in prayer is very important to your walk with the Lord. Find the time to pray everyday.

**Luke 18:1; "And he spake a parable unto this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint."**

If a baby does not spend time with their mother, they would die. The only way you can grow spiritually is by having a relationship with Jesus. The way you have a relationship (fellowship) with Jesus is by spending time with him in prayer. Realize that you need him to feed you, protect you, and keep you on the right path.

He is the Lord, and you are the servant. God is the Father, and you are the child, so submit and humble yourself to him.

***Matthew 18:3-4; "Verily I say unto you, except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child. The same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven."***

Give yourself completely to Jesus, depend on him, he will not let you down.

***1 Peter 5:6; "Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God."***

Submit yourself to him, and as you humble yourself to God, resist any rebellious and doubtful thoughts against God, and seek him continually. God will teach and feed you by his Word, so that you can grow. Every baby I ever saw had an incredible appetite, they always wanted to eat and sleep. You must be the same way, but you must be hungry and thirsty for God.

***Matthew 5:6; "Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness; for they shall be filled."***

Just like that baby, you must eat and rest. The way we rest in the Lord is by knowing that no matter what happens in our lives, we are going to be taken care of, because God is on our side.

He will not allow more to come upon you than what you can bear. That way, you can grow strong and healthy in the Lord. You have found new life in Jesus, and except you are fed continually, you will fall away and lose your relationship with him. Getting into prayer and reading God's Word should become a top priority in your life, and you need to pray and be fed every day, so you can grow spiritually.

***1 Peter 2:2; "As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby."***

As you feed on God's Word, you need to be able to understand it for it to benefit you. You cannot give steak to a newborn baby, so stay with the milk of the Word to begin with, such as is taught in the first lessons of this bible study.

The Word of God is basically the mind of God revealed to us, and we know that God's thoughts are far above ours.

***Isaiah 55:8-9; "For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the Lord. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts."***

God brings his Word to us in a way we can receive it and understand,

***Isaiah 55:10; "For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater."***

**God brings his Word to us like rain, it falls from the clouds and waters the earth, and the earth accepts it and produces fruit.**

God gives his Word to us in ways we can understand, so it can bring forth fruit in your life.

God's Word was given to man to help them serve him, but you must realize that God is a Spirit.

***John 4:24; "...God is a Spirit."***

So, God's Word is spiritual, Jesus said in

***John 6:63; "It is the spirit that quickened; the flesh profited nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life."***

So, the Word of God is only discerned by the Spirit of God.

***1 Corinthians 2:14; "But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."***

If you refer back to the chapter on the Holy Ghost, you learned about how God would teach you all things. In

1 Peter 2:2, it says that to desire the Word means to hunger for it. As you sincerely seek God for revelation of his Word, he will begin to reveal it to you.

As you grow in the Lord and achieve some maturity, the Spirit of God will reveal more and more of the meaning of the Word to you.

***Isaiah 28:9-10; "Whom shall he teach knowledge? And whom shall he make to understand doctrine? Them that are weaned from the***



*milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line, here a little, and there a little."*

God will teach you his Word a little bit at a time, and when you have learned one lesson, he will move you to another. When you are young in the Lord and growing you really want to apply yourself to studying the Word.

***2 Timothy 2:15; "Study to shew thyself approved unto God."***

Another way God will reveal his Word to you, is a part of the third step of growth. God uses men and women to teach his Word to others.

***Ephesians 4:11; "And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers."***

**It is very important to become established in a church, so you can be taught the Word and grow spiritually.**

Be a part of a body of believers and become involved in the activities of the church. Don't be idle but be an active participant.

Find a ministry where the anointed Word is preached and taught, with signs following.

***Mark 16:17-18; "And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; They shall take up serpents (send demons to flight) and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover."***

There will be many questions that you will need to have answered, so God has ordained that the church be an active part of the life of every believer. Christ has placed others in the ministry for the purpose of teaching and helping. He has placed leaders in the church to equip, buildup, and teach, so that his people will not be deceived or led astray. Pastors have been placed into the body to be overseers, to watch over the body of believers and to warn them of dangers. In this way, babies can grow to full maturity. I have seen many that would not sit under a pastor, but who were always running here and there and never grew to full maturity. You must learn to submit yourself under a pastor so you can learn and grow.

***Jeremiah 3:15; "And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding."***

Stay rooted and grounded in a ministry, don't jump up and run after everything that looks good, stay where God has placed you. Learn to wait on God and learn patience. In God's time he will begin to open doors, to use you in areas of the ministry he has called you into. He will begin to use you in small things and if you are faithful in these, he will move you to bigger things. As you grow and are faithful to God, the enemy will come against you to discourage you, to try to get you to give up, but you shall reap what you sow. Go on with the Lord, and in time you will see the fruits of your labors.

***Galatians 6:9; "And let us be not weary in well doing; for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not."***

As you stand and become stronger, God will begin to open even more doors of opportunity that will require even more commitment. Always remember to be faithful in all things.

To sum up this lesson on how to grow, the following steps will guide you in the process:

1. Prayer and fellowship with Jesus and God through the Holy Ghost, so he can lead and guide us. Comforting and encourage us, so we can obtain help in time of need. Casting all your problems on him because he cares for you.
2. The Word will reveal God's will, so we can learn and grow to full maturity. By partaking of his word, we become more like him.
3. Being rooted and grounded in a church, so we can be taught spiritual knowledge by God's chosen leaders, and not be led astray by false doctrine. Have others to fellowship with, to draw comfort and knowledge from them through their experiences.
4. Become involved and active, so you can learn from experience and develop a sense of responsibility.

Remember that God wants you to grow and be a strong mature adult in Christ. Every day of your life in Christ you will learn and grow, you will never know everything about God and his love for you. So, continue to grow in Jesus Christ.

This is just a part of the price that you will have to pay for God's miracle working power. Pray and study his Word so you can grow strong. Spend time with Jesus and seek him continually. In the next lesson we will get into another area of the price you must pay.

**SECTION # 2**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 12**  
**TEMPTATIONS, PERSECUTION, TRIALS**

We now come into an area that every Christian will have to face, temptations, persecution, and trials. How we handle them will determine whether or not we will walk in the power of God. Jesus said in,

***Revelations 21:7; "He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son".***

Many think that we have to wait till we get to heaven, to receive from God, but the power that will bring deliverance is needed now. We are joint-heirs with Christ. That means everything that Jesus had access to, we do too. But if Jesus had to go through opposition, you will too. It says in,

***Romans 2:11"...for there is no respect of persons with God".***

If you fail in the trials, you will have very little power, but if you stand and resist the enemy when he comes in like a flood and not let things discourage you, then you will walk in power.

Several years ago in prayer, I saw a vision of myself kneeling in prayer. Above my head, was the hand of God, and he had a pitcher in his hand, and as he tilted the pitcher, golden oil poured out onto my head, covering me totally. Then God spoke to me and said, "Out of you will pour my golden oil to my people." Since that day, I have seen God do many miraculous things. God has also spoken to me and told me that he had given me his miracle working power. God wants to give it to you also, if you will stand the test.

Jesus faced many trials, and every time he turned around, the religious leaders were coming against him. Let us read one of the bible's descriptions of what Jesus suffered.

***Isaiah 53:3; "He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows: and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not".***

Down through the ages, God's people have been persecuted, rejected and despised, and as a servant of God you will have your share of it also.

***1 Peter 4:1; "For as much then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourself likewise with the same mind".***

Even though you may have temptations, persecutions, and trials, God will not allow more to come upon you than what you can bear. The choice is up to you, as God will not force you to do anything against your will. Our will to please him must be stronger than our will to please ourselves. It is God's nature to reach out to man in love and compassion, and this should be the reason why you desire God's power. So, you can reach out to others in love and compassion. God loves man and doesn't want anyone to perish. This should become our desire also. We should hate the things that the enemy is doing to man.

***John 10:10; "The thief (Satan) cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy".***

Knowing what the enemy is doing to mankind should cause us to Love God even more, because we know that God is the creator of love and life. Obeying God should not be a burden. We should obey him because we love him. In the Old Testament, we read a sad statement that God made.

***Ezekiel 22:30; "And I sought for a man among them, that should make up the hedge, and stand in the gap before me for the land, that I should not destroy it: but I found none".***

God found no one to pay the price, will you? Get a burden for the lost, because God will only give you his power, when you get a burden for the lost, and are able to reach out to them in love and compassion.

When you begin to stand in the gap, you will come under attack of the enemy, there will be those who will despise and reject you. You will be hated, talked about, mocked, and scorned.

God will require things from you, and not others, and you will be asked to give up pleasures that others are allowed to enjoy. It will mean many long hours in prayer, studying the word, and fasting sometimes many days at a time. This is how Paul described it in,

***2 Corinthians 6:3-5; "Giving no offense in anything, that the ministry be not blamed: But in all things approving ourselves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, In stripes, in labours, in watchings, in fastings;"***

God asked me this question one time, he asked if I would pay the price for his miracle working power, and I said yes. Writing this bible study is part of that price.

I have been despised and rejected by many, but God has required that I be faithful. Many have said that they would fast and pray with you, but after a short time you look around and only you and Jesus remain.

Jesus was a man that spent much time in prayer to the Father. In ***Luke 6:12; "And it came to pass in those days, that he (Jesus) went out into the a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God."***

He had a lot of people around him much of the time, but in the hardest time of his life, almost all left him to stand by himself. When the multitude came to arrest him, they deserted him.

***Matthew 26:56; "Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled".***

There is nothing like the power of God, nothing on earth can compare to it, but there is a price to pay for it. Will you pay the price? Jesus tells us in his Word to count the cost. You can have his power if you are willing to pay the price.

***Luke 14:25-33; "And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them, <sup>26</sup>If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. <sup>27</sup>And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. <sup>28</sup>For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it? <sup>29</sup>Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it begin to mock him, <sup>30</sup>Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. <sup>31</sup>Or what king, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten***

*thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand?*

*<sup>32</sup>Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace. <sup>33</sup>So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple."*

Jesus laid it out plainly, he wants all of you, and he expects you to totally commit your life to him. You might say that it sounds like you have to die. That is exactly what it is, you have to die to yourself, but then come alive in Christ.

As you think about the things you will have to give up, remember this one thing. In

*2 Corinthians 4:18; "While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal".*

Only what you do for Jesus will matter when we stand before him in judgment. You may say that you will have to give up your friends, but there is no friend like Jesus, he gave his life for you.

There is no relationship in the world that can compare to a relationship with Jesus Christ. There is no glory or praise in this world that can compare to the glory we will receive from God when we go to be with him. Remember what the scripture said in

*Hebrews 9:27; "And it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment".*

We must work for Christ now, while we can, because someday we will die. We cannot allow the things that are here today and gone tomorrow to determine where we will spend eternity.

*Mark 8:34-38; "And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it. For what shall it profit a man, if he gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul"?*

Is there anything in this world that is worth going to HELL over? The answer to that question is a resounding NO! Some people give up the things of God for a few moments of pleasure, and what about you?

There is no wealth or riches that can compare to what God has in store for them that love him.

***1 Corinthians 2:9; "But as it is written, eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him."***

The purpose of this chapter of the bible study is focused on paying the price to obtain God's power. I must mention the fact that God gives every believer the power to live a victorious life over sin, but he also gives us power over the enemy, which gives us the ability to resist temptation, stand in trials, and maintain our joy in the face of persecution. Just like the disciples, you soon learn to root the devil out of some-one else's life, to take more of God in your own life. So let us learn from the greatest example of all, Jesus Christ.

***Hebrews 12:2-3; "Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of God. For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds."***

Jesus lived a quiet life as a carpenter, up to the age of thirty. There is no mention of any temptation or trials. But apparently there were some, because just living in this world, opens you up to temptation. When the time came for him to be baptized, as he came up out of the water, God spoke and said in

***Luke 3:22; "Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased."***

So, apparently he had been doing what was pleasing to the Father, which means he had been resisting temptation. Also, upon being baptized he was filled with the Holy Ghost, and that is when the enemy really began to come against him.

When you make up your mind and heart to have God's best, that is when the battle will really begin. How you deal with the temptations and trials will determine how much of God's power you will receive. Keep



pressing, no matter how many times you fail. Let's look at some of the trials that Jesus went through.

*Luke 4:1-14; "And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the spirit into the wilderness. Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered. And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee: And in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. And when the devil had ended all the temptations, he departed from him for a season. And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit."*

If you noticed when he went into the desert, he was full of the Holy Ghost, but when he came out, he was full of the power of the Spirit. He obtained the power by defeating the enemy. His first battle with the devil, recorded after being baptized and filled with the Holy Ghost was when the devil came against him in his flesh, to try to get him to turn away from the God's will, to satisfy his hunger. If Jesus had done this, he would have committed two sins. Eating is a natural instinct that is in us all, and it is not a sin to eat, but Jesus was on a fast, which was God's will. First the devil tempted him with the **lust of the flesh**. He tried to get Christ to use the power he had to gratify himself, by tempting him to turn the stone into bread. God doesn't give his power to us just so we can please or gratify

ourselves, or to make ourselves feel good, but his power is to bring him glory, not us. This power is to bring deliverance to his people. Therefore, if he had turned the stone into bread, he would have been using the power to please his flesh. Secondly, he was on a fast, and this was not the way he was supposed to end it. I have learned that while fasting, the way we end it is just as important as the way we start. If he had eaten at that time, it would have been out of God's will, which would have been sin. God has set ways of doing things, we have to learn to be obedient to his will not ours. We have to deny ourselves in order to do God's will, just as Jesus denied the desire (lust) of the flesh. You must realize that who you yield yourself to, is the one who you will serve.

*Romans 6:16; "Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?"*

The second temptation the devil came against him with was the **lust of the eye**; the devil showed him all of the kingdoms of the world. Appealing to his Godly nature. Jesus knew of the glory he had shared with the Father from the foundation of the world.

*John 17:5; "And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was."*

But he had decided to do the will of the Father.

*John 4:34; "My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work."*

Jesus came to save man from sin, he came as a servant to give his life as a ransom for all.

He knew that he was going to suffer and die, and then he knew he would receive his glory once again. The devil offered him the chance to obtain glory without suffering and dying, but that was not God's will. The devil appealed to the lust of the eye by showing him all the glory he might receive, if he would turn away from God's plan, but he resisted him and stayed the course.

Thirdly the devil came against his self-preservation, the desire to preserve himself and this is a way the enemy comes against many which is the **pride of life**.

The devil took him to the temple, told him to throw himself down if he was the Son of God. He told Christ to show him what he was made of. He said that Jesus claimed to be the Son of God, and to show him his power, giving Jesus the opportunity to be lifted-up in pride. But Jesus was not here to lift up self, but instead to lift up God only.

***John 8:50; "I seek not mine own glory".***

Jesus resisted the temptation to be lifted-up in pride, he withstood all the temptations of the enemy.

***Hebrews 4:15; "...but was in all points tempted like as we are yet without sin".***

Jesus overcame all the very same temptations the devil will use against you. They will not be exactly the same but they will be the same in nature.

***1 John 2:16-17; "For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth forever".***

These are the very same temptations that Eve fell for, see if you can spot each one.

***Genesis 3:6; "And when the women saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat."***

Adam and Eve failed the test, but Jesus did not, therefore he became the author of life, and all power was given to him. The devil will come against you to tempt you, but you must resist him.

***James 4:7; "Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you."***

What was Jesus doing in the desert, he was there seeking God, therefore when the devil came to tempt him, he had the power to resist him. He learned to deny his flesh.

***Galatians 5:24; "And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts."***

The flesh must be brought under subjection to the will of God. You will soon learn that this is not always easy and can only be done with God's help. The flesh loves to be pampered and exalted, it loves to have it's own way. It likes to take the easy way out and cannot easily receive the things of God.

***1 Corinthians 2:14; "But the nature man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned."***

The things of God must be received by faith. You will face temptation, but with every temptation God will provide a way of escape. Stay close to him in prayer, then when the temptations come, you will be able to resist them.

Temptation is when the enemy comes against you to draw you away from God's will, by the desires of your own flesh.

***James 1:14; "But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed."***

The sinful lust of the flesh must be denied.

Also, when you decide to have God's best, you will face persecution. Persecution is the devil coming against you through people, circumstances, and situations that he will use to his advantage. Jesus faced great persecution, and so will you.

***2Timothy 3:12; "Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution."***

When you step out and begin to be used by God, persecution will rise up all around you, from people and sources you never expected.

After Jesus returned from the wilderness full of the Power of the Spirit, he went into his hometown and preached one sermon. This one sermon made the people so mad, that they wanted to kill him, and these were people he had grown up with.

***Luke 4:28-30; "And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong. But he passing through the midst of them went his way."***

Jesus was despised, rejected, and persecuted by the religious world, by sinners as well as his own people. Persecution has always been a part of God's people's lives, and Jesus knew that he would be despised and rejected.

When people are confronted with the gospel, they will have to choose to receive it or reject it, and when someone rejects the truth, they are soon given over to deception. Jesus himself said in

***John 3:19; "...light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light."***

When one chooses to reject Jesus, they soon become instruments of unrighteousness. The enemy will use anyone he can to come against you, and people that you never expected Satan to use, will come against you too.

***Matthew 10:34-36; "Think not that I am come to send peace on earth; I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, And the daughter in law against her mother in law. And a man's foes shall be they of his own household."***

Jesus suffered many things for man, so they could be saved. Let's read about some of his sufferings. In

***Isaiah 53:3-4; "He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely he hath borne our grief's, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken."***

***Isaiah 53:12; "Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong."***

If you will stand in the face of persecution, you can obtain God's best for your life.

***Matthew 5:11-12; "Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you."***

Family members and friends will despise and reject you, but in reality they are not just rejecting you, but he who sent you.

***Luke 10:16; "He that heareth you heareth me; and he that despiseth you despiseth me; and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me."***

When we go through rejection and persecution, we should always handle it in a way that brings honor to God, never in a way that will bring a reproach on his name. Let the love of God flow from you out to those who are coming against you. Never take matters into your own hands to strike back but take it to Jesus and he will repay. Stand strong in the Lord and God will greatly anoint you with power from on High.

Also, as a child of God, you will have to endure trials. Trials are the enemy coming against you, to try your faith. Remember what the devil said to Jesus, he said if you are the Son of God, turn this stone into bread, trying and tempting his faith. Trials are when the enemy is oppressing your mind with negative thoughts. Many times, when you are going through a trial, the enemy will bring up past failures, and using those failures to condemn you. He will try to fill your mind with a lack of self-worth. Sometimes the trials will seem so hard, you may even feel like just throwing up your hands and giving up, but that is exactly what the devil wants you to do. It will be as if a spirit of heaviness has come upon you, and no matter what you do you just cannot shake it. I believe a scripture that describes trials is found in.

***Psalms 23:4; "...Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death,"***

And, sometimes that is exactly what it will feel like, it will feel as if you are all by yourself, nobody loves you or cares. Discouragement sets in, and all you feel like doing is giving up. Now listen to the rest of that scripture,

***Psalms 23:4; "...Yea, though I walk through the valley of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me."***

No matter what you may be going through you are not alone, for God is always with you. He said in

***Hebrews 13:5; "I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee."***

He will be with you every step of the way, and he understands everything that you are going through. Sometimes the enemy will come against you from every side. Paul talks about some of the trials he went through in

***2 Corinthians 1:8; "For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life."***

Paul, actually despaired for his life because he was also in great tribulation, and in reality, you are in despair of your life also, because the devil wants to kill you spiritually. But know one thing, when the devil is coming against you, it is because you are doing something right, and that something right is serving God. You can expect the enemy to come against you.

***1 Peter 4:12-13; "Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trials which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you. But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's suffering."***

Trials are the trying or testing of your faith. The enemy is coming against your faith in God and trying to get you to doubt and question God. Because when you begin to doubt and question God, it is sin and anything other than faith is sin. The devil knows this, and that is why he comes against your faith in God. But if you are going to walk in power you must never doubt or question God.

***1 Peter 1:7; "That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ."***

How can you bring glory to Jesus in trials? You can do it by standing strong and not doubting him.

The enemy will do everything he can to stop you from getting the miracle working power of God. He will put pitfalls and snares in your path to cause you to fall, and you will fall into some of them. But get back up, and keep going forward, keep on pressing. You must be aware of the

schemes of the devil. When people persecute you, and divers (various) temptation comes your way, when trials are on every hand, all it consists of is the devil coming against you, to cause you to give up. He is trying to stop you from pressing on and going after God's power. But no matter what happens, keep going on, because temptations, persecutions and trials will come and go. But if you are standing in Christ Jesus, you will not come and go, you will be rooted and grounded on the rock.

***Matthew 7:24-27; "Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock:" (Jesus Christ is the Rock of our Salvation) And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it."***

The wind and rain and floods here refer to the hardship of life, of trials, persecutions and temptations we face. The sand is relying on your own strengths and abilities. Trusting in the things of the world. We must put our trust and hope in Jesus Christ if we are going to stand and be strong.

When you determine in your heart that you are going to have God's best, he will help you achieve your vision. Let us now look at what you will have to overcome to obtain God's Miracle Working Power.

THE FLESH, Temptation, Self-denial, Suffering

THE WORLD, Persecution, Rejection, Despisement.

THE DEVIL, Trials, Oppression

In the Old Testament, we have a story about God's people, they had come up to the land that God had promised them. God has promised that we can have his power. God's great leader Moses had died, and now God had raised up Joshua to be the leader. He told them to go into the promised land and conquer, and God has also raised you up to conquer. Listen to what God tells Joshua in



***Joshua 1:5-9; "There shall not any man be able to stand before thee all the days of thy life: I will be with thee: I will not fail thee, nor forsake thee. Be strong and of a good courage: Only be thou strong and very courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the law, turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper whithersoever thou goest. The book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success. Have not I commanded thee? Be strong and of a good courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed: for the Lord thy God is with thee whithersoever thou goest."***

Jesus has told us in the Word that we can do the works he did, and we shall! But we must not allow anything to discourage us and cause us to give up. You must keep on hungering and thirsting for the things of God. If you will strive to be what God wants you to be, you will be, and you shall walk in power over all the powers of the enemy.

***Mark 16:17-18; "And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover."***

**SECTION # 2**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 13**  
**TOTAL OBEDIENCE**

If you want to walk in God's power, there are certain requirements to be met. Meeting these requirements is not as easy as you may think. Let start in Hebrews chapter 12. We have all heard about Paul, he was a man that was used greatly of GOD. Paul tells us in

**Hebrews 12:5** *"And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, my son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou are rebuked of him:*

"Why does God rebuke and chastise people? It is because of disobedience.

**Ephesians 4:30** *"For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons;"*

In other words, if you accept the rebuking and chastening of the Lord when you are disobedient, then he considers you a son. ***"For what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?"***

Why does God chasten us? God chastens us because of disobedience. I have had people come to me and tell me that they don't understand why but God never talks to them, they never feel his presence. They have come to the Lord and asked him to forgive them of their sins, but they just don't have a relationship with him. They can't understand God's Word when they read it. Then I have to ask, "are you walking in obedience to what God is telling you what to do?" Are you seeking him with all your heart? Those who are disobedient to God cannot get close him. The, more we walk in obedience to what he tells us to do, the closer we can get to him.

Some people are so disobedient to the leading of the spirit, and to what God wants them to do, that they hardly have any relationship with him. They claim the name of the Lord, but they don't honor him in their actions.

**Hebrews 12:8; *"But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers..."***

In other words, every single person who is going to follow God, is going to be chastised, and there is going to come a time when God by his Spirit is going to correct you, and there are times that he uses the man standing behind the pulpit and he corrects him by his word. There are times God tells you to do things through the preacher or evangelist standing behind the pulpit. And when you don't do what God tells you to do through his anointed vessel, then you're being disobedient to God. If a man or woman of God is standing behind the pulpit and the Spirit of God speaks to them and tells them to tell you to do something and you don't, it's disobedience. We don't have time to be disobedient, playtime is over with, and it's time for God's people to begin to walk in obedience. How can we call ourselves children of God when we are constantly disobedient to him? Picking back up where we left off earlier, in

**Hebrews 12-8; *"...then are ye bastards, and not sons. Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh that corrected us and we gave them reverence, shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the father's spirit and live."***

If we will not accept the correction of the Lord, we are illegitimate, and not children of God. Every word matters in the Word of God, so what does subjection really mean? It means when we are subjected to someone, so that means we are under their authority. So, as it is used here, if we subject or submit ourselves unto the Father we shall live.

Jesus when talking to the disciple's, told them to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Scribes. Which was there teaches and pride. In his teaching he talked about how they love to be greeted and take the chief seat in the synagogues. When they came into the house of God they loved to be recognized. Jesus said that they loved to be called Rabbi. Rabbi which means teacher, or leader. Jesus says in

**Matthew 23:7-10; *"And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi:" "But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren, And call no man father upon the***

***earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ."***

So twice in verse 8 and 10 he is saying Christ is our Master. Basically, what he is telling us, is not to be submitted to or subjected to anyone but Jesus Christ. Some have said that the meaning of this scripture says call no man Father upon earth for one is your Father in heaven, that doesn't mean that we cannot call our natural father by that term, all he is saying is that are heavenly father is our master and head. In the natural, you are under and subjected to your natural father, but God is talking about in the spirit, and we have to look at what the Spirit is saying. We only have one Father, so don't be subjected to any of this world's bondage. At one time, every single one of us where in bondage to this world in one way or another.

***Galatians 4-3; "Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world:"***

Every single one of us was subjected to spirits, yokes, and burdens and under bondage to the enemy.

***Ephesians 2:2,3; "Where in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: 3) Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others."***

At one time we were controlled by the elements of this world, and the world is controlled by the devil. At one time the enemy controlled us all, and we were in bondage. But then Jesus came along and set us free. Jesus said In

***John 8-36; "If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed."***

If Jesus sets you free, then you are no longer under the bondage of the world, and you are no longer subjected to the enemy. The yoke has been broken, the bondage has been lifted, and you are totally set free. Now that Jesus has set you free, do not be subjected to anyone or anything but

him. Jesus is your new Master, and you have only one Master, and that is Jesus Christ.

What does the word Master mean?

A teacher

A Lord who exercises power

One who has absolute ownership, and controlling power over another.

A commander a guide, to go before,

A pilot or steersman of a ship, shipmaster

To exercise Lordship over one

A shepherd to comfort

Captain of our soul

Those are pretty strong statements describing what a Master is. Now ask yourself this question, does God have absolute controlling power in your life? When the Spirit of God leads you to do something, are you obedient?

When he asks you to pray, do you pray? When he asks you to fast, do you fast, does he have absolute controlling power in your life? Jesus stated plainly that you cannot have two masters.

**Luke 16-13; "No servant can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other."**

You cannot serve God and the world; you cannot serve God and self. We must let go of all the things that are hindering the anointing from flowing in our lives. When we came to Jesus and repented of our sins, by his power he delivered us. The work of deliverance was completed at the cross of Calvary. But many times, even though total deliverance is available. We hold on to things of the world. There is no addiction or habit more powerful than the power of the resurrected Christ the anointing will destroy the yoke. When Jesus set us free, he completely set us free from all the bondage and strong holds that the enemy placed in our lives. Jesus has become our new master he became our Lord, and he is our King. We always see him as one who came as a Lamb. He came as a servant to seek and to save those that were lost. He went to the cross and died, but

he arose out of the grave with great power. Jesus Christ is not dead, he's alive, and when you gave your heart to him, you became his servant. Here is a description of our Lord and King Jesus Christ.

**Revelation 19:11-16;** *"And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God. And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of almighty God. And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS."*

That is our Master, he's not hanging on a cross, he's ruling and reigning. Let's find out a little bit more about our Savior, our Master, King, Lord, this Shepherd that is the captain of our soul, the prince of peace, the comforter, the one that we are serving. The one who set us free and delivered us, the one who has resurrected us and gave us life, the one who took us from the pits and raised us up from the dung hill and set us up with him in heavenly places. This is whom we are talking about here. He is the one we worship and praise and pray to. Let us read about this King we serve,

**Philippians 2: 9-11;** *"Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth: And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."*

Jesus is the exalted one. He has power over every devil and demon. He is the anointed one, he is the one that died on the cross for sin, and God has given him power. He is our Lord, our King and the one who set us free. Jesus said in

**Matthew 28:18; "All power is given into me in heaven and in earth."**

That word "all" means just that, all, there is none left that he doesn't possess, he has all power. That means that the power the enemy has belongs to Jesus too. Jesus has the keys to death, hell and the grave, and that he has the keys to the kingdom of God. Satan is a defeated foe; Jesus has already defeated him. Jesus has great power, how would you like some of that power? You can have it. Let's look in

**Ephesians 2:4-6; "But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus."**

The reason why people do not have the power of God in their lives is because they're not sitting in heavenly places with Christ Jesus. Why does it seem that the devil has more success than God's people do? It is because we are not sitting up there with Jesus Christ. There are a few that attain that place, but not very many. If we are sitting in heavenly places with Christ Jesus, everything that Jesus has access to, we do too. If you are in heavenly places with Christ, you will be partaking of his glory and power. This means that you walk and operate in the spirit at all the time, you, can have his power only by walking in total obedience to what he wants you to do. God is not going to give a disobedient or unrepentant servant his power.

In the natural, if we do not do what the boss tells us to on our jobs, we would not have that job for long and we would get fired. And yet, because we serve a loving, merciful, and compassionate Savior, we sometimes think that we can do whatever we want to. He will tell us to do something, and we are totally disobedient to him. But if you are going to obtain the power of God, you must learn to walk in total obedience.

I pose the question again, why does it seem that the devil people are more success than God's people? It is because God's people are not walking in power. God has called us to be servants, and as God's people,

we should yield ourselves to him and not yield ourselves to disobedience. For whom we yield ourselves to is your Master.

**Romans 6:12-14;** *"Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness into God. For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace."*

Didn't Jesus break the dominion of sin over you when you got saved? Yes, he did and now that you're under the dominion of Jesus, you're his servant. So, you have to ask yourself, if you are yielding your members to sin, are you Christ's servant? We have to yield ourselves to God, to give ourselves totally to him. He is the Lord, and we are his servants.

**James 4:7;** *"Submit yourselves therefore to God."*

Give yourself to him. Now I know that that is not always easy, as we are rebellious by nature. It may take many years for us to learn to walk in obedience to the leading of the spirit, but God will lovingly correct you and teach you until you become obedient to him. God will teach us what pleases him and what does not please him.

**1 Corinthians 7:22;** *"For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lord's freeman: likewise also he that is called, being free, is Christ's servant."*

We can see in God's Word that we have been called to serve him. God wants you to be filled with his power, so you can be a leader, but first you must learn to serve. You must learn to submit to God in total obedience. Just what is obedience? Obedience is the act of doing whatever God commands you to do, obeying the leading of the Spirit. In

**Mark 13:34;** *"For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch. He gave them authority to accomplish the work he assigned them."*



God by his Son Jesus Christ has set us free so we can work, so that we can be servants. The Lord spoke to me recently and told me that many of his people want reward without servitude. Let's look at.

**Luke 17:7-10; *"But which of you, having a servant plowing or feeding cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat? And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not. So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things, which are, commanded you, say. We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do."***

It is quite clear that God expects us to be obedient, and to submit ourselves to his authority. People want to be successful and prosperous and for God to bless them. But they don't want to labor for him. Whatever God has called you to do if you do it with all your heart God will bless you. If God just gave everything to you, would you appreciate it as much as if you had labored for it? Christ has given each one of us a job to do, and we are to serve him.

**1 Corinthians 4:2; *"Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful."***

God has called you to serve him, and the way we serve him is by doing what he commands us in his Word, by obeying the leading of his Spirit. If you will learn to walk in obedience, he will greatly anoint you with his miracle working power. That anointing as you learn comes through the Holy Ghost, and when we are disobedient to the leadership of the Spirit, it grieves the Spirit. Jesus said in

**John 14:15; *"If ye love me keep my commandments."***

Obey him in everything.

**John 14:23; *"If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him."***

If we will learn to walk in total obedience to the leading of the Spirit, we will walk in the power of God. Bring every thought and action into obedient to God. In every area of our lives totally committed and subjected to the Spirit of God. If we hunger and thirst for God, with the desire to be used of him in a great way and are willing to pay the price we may obtain God's miracle working power in our lives. The master using us to do great things for him.

**SECTION # 3**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 14**  
**GOD THE FATHER - JEHOVAH**

*“Every good gift and  
every perfect gift is  
from above, and cometh  
down from the Father.”  
(James 1:17a)*

God! God! How can I be pleasing to You? How can I fight the good fight of faith! How can I run this race and be victorious? These cries have come out of the very depths of my heart for as long as I can remember. For so many years I have sought God for the answers. I now hear a still small voice saying: “Walk before me and be thou perfect”. Is this the answer to the cries of my heart? But how can a man of flesh and blood be perfect? How can I be righteous and holy! “How can I be pleasing to God?”

One thing we must always remember is that, often inspite of our greatest efforts and attempts, we may always seem to come up short of God’s perfect will for our lives. Job was a man whom God declared to be perfect. And yet Job lost everything. Job even questioned why he even born. Did he fail God? No! How many times have you felt that you failed God? Did Jesus fail when “He came unto his own, and his own received him not” (John 1:11). As long as we live in these fleshly bodies God will always be leading us to perfection. This is the nature of his Spirit, always propelling us to excellence. The reason why is because God knows we need him. We must never come to the place where we depend upon flesh and not God.

Often because we feel the call or will of God on our lives, we in are pride and zeal try to make things happen. Moses is an example, Moses no doubt feeling the call of God on his life to free God’s people killed the Egyptian. When the truth came out he fled from Egypt in fear of his life.

Often when we try to make things happen in our lives and get ahead of God, we end up frustrated, exhausted, at the end of our rope. How-ever God does not judge us according to man's standards but judges righteously. He does not look on the outward man but looks at the intent of the heart. Why does God allow us to have disappointments, failures? Could it be that through disappointments and failures God is teaching to depend upon him? To trust him! Job said:

***“But he knoweth the way that I take: when he hath tried me, I shall come forth as gold” (Job 23:10).***

God often allows us to have disappointments and yes failures so we will not depend upon ourselves. So, we will surrender to him! The scripture says:

***“Trust in the Lord with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths” (Proverbs 3:5-6).***

No matter what happens in our lives God wants us to trust him. Even though we don't fully understand Gods plan we can declare with Job,

***“For He performeth the thing that is appointed for me: and many such things are with Him” (Job 23:14)***

Even though all that had happened to Job, he knew God still had a plan. We also just know that God will not fail us! He is molding us into the vessels he desires us to be. God desire us to be patient, willing and ready. The scriptures say:

***“In your patience possess ye your souls” (Luke 21:19)***

I have come to realize our redemption and salvation our success does not depend on our strengths and abilities; it depends on the might and power of God. We stand entirely in the ability of God, to accomplish his will in our lives. The scriptures say:

***“According as His divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness,” (1 Peter 1:4a)***

God has given to us everything that we need to follow Him, to be saved, to be successful spiritually; but we need to wait upon God and

accept what he has for us. By waiting upon God allows him to build in us his nature and character.

***“But they that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint” (Isaiah 40:31).***

We don't have the ability in these sinful bodies to be saved. We don't have the ability to resist sin. I have found the good I desire to do I cannot do in my own strength. We were never created to have to war against evil spirits, to resist temptation, to strive against sin. We were created to dwell in the wonderful presence of God; to sup with Him, to know him, to draw from His strength and power. Therefore, He has made available everything we need, to live a life pleasing to Him. Jesus said:

***“Fear not little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give to you the kingdom” (Luke 12:32).***

God in his loving kindness and mercy has given to us everything we need. He is a kind and loving father and out of his heart of love flows his goodness, he desires to pour his Spirit out upon you and give to you his many precious gifts. God wants to give to you the riches of his kingdom, Godly spiritual riches. Do you like receiving good things? They are only found in God! He wants to give them to you in abundance, beyond measure until you overflow with his blessings. God takes pleasure in giving you the good things of his kingdom. Only by receive the things that God has for you can your life be filled with joy, peace, and happiness. The very things you need to have for a peaceful, happy, joyful, successful, prosperous, and victorious life are within your grasp. Do you what to receive the good things? They are right in front of you. The problem is many don't know how to obtain the riches of God's kingdom, even though they are right in front of them. There is no given key to receive the blessing of God in your life. But it consists of seeking, waiting, have patience and humbling yourself to God. That way he can transform your heart, soul, and mind. And the only way that can happen is you must seek after the good gifts that God has for you him. God wants you to seek Him, to seek after His heart, to know Him, to seek Him with your whole heart.

***“But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness: and all these things shall be added unto you” (Matthew 6:33).***

***“And ye shall seek Me, and find Me, when ye shall search for Me with all your heart. And I will be found of you, saith the Lord” (Jeremiah 29:12-13a).***

He has so much He wants to give to man if they would just seek after Him. God wants us to love him with all our heart. And when God find someone who will love him, as a loving Father he will open the windows of heaven and pour out his blessing upon you filling your spirit, soul, mind, and body with his goodness. If we could only realize the magnitude of His generous gifts, it would change the way we think, and in return change our lives forever. God has not withheld one single thing from man that they have need of but has given to them the most precious riches of His kingdom. Everything man could ever have need of, Everything, beneficial to us and to our very existence, God has supplied.

***“Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: For every one that asketh receiveth; and He that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask Him?” (Matthew 7:7-11).***

God has given to us life, liberty, and joy. However, to understand all that is available to us we must first understand who God is! Why He is God? What, He has given to us? Why He does what He does? So hold on as we take a journey into the heart of our loving, kind, generous, and wonderful Father. I have to ask you the question, are you ready? Ok, let's go!!

What is a god? According to Webster's dictionary, it is a supreme deity, that is, one who is superior above man in all ways and all things. From the earliest records that mankind has, man has always known of the existence of God. Mankind has always been fascinated by supernatural beings. They have always been curious of the fact that there is life beyond

this world. In the last 50 years we have seen an explosion of movies on aliens, paranormal activities, the occult, mythologies, etc. The Greece and many other cultures knew the existence of Gods. Man has always been interested and has sought to understand the supernatural. Well, the search is over, for we are told:

***“The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork” (Psalms 19:1).***

Every time you look at the moon and the stars, the heavens shout that God is real, He is alive! He is full of power, glory and might! The Apostle Paul, in his letter to the Roman church said:

***“Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them. For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made” (Romans 1:19-20).***

God has openly made His existence known to mankind. He has not hidden Himself from them. He did not create man and then say, “There you go, you are on your own.” No! Not at all! He has always been and will always be within our reach. He, in return, is always reaching out, desiring to give to man His best. He is so easy to be found if one will just search for him. If one will remove the blinders of ignorance and humanistic reasoning and receive Him as a child, they will find Him. He has moved His hand on the behalf of His people from the very beginning, and He will not fail His people in the end. Jehovah is a progressive God, always creating, building, increasing in the lives of his people.

Let us now look at God’s creation in the beginning. As with every kingdom, there is always a start. However, God Himself, is eternal:

***“Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever Thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God”(Psalm 90:2).***

We don’t know anything about God before He created the heavens and earth, and the record of creation is very brief, it simply states “God created, first the heavens, then the earth:

***“In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth”  
(Genesis 1:1).***

So, God established the place of His abode first. After He created the heavens, and apparently all who dwells in heaven, then He created the earth. When we look down into verse 2 of Genesis one, we notice the Spirit of God is mentioned. Then in verse 26 it says ***“let Us make man in Our image”*** so we know that there was more than One from the very beginning. This is brought out very clearly in the New Testament through the Apostle John, who said:

***“For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are One” (1 John 5:7).***

From the very beginning there were three in the God Head, the eternal Father, eternal Son, and eternal Holy Ghost. We know that the reference of the Word is Jesus Christ:

***“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God” (John 1:1).***

What this means is that Jesus was the fulfillment of God’s Word. From the very beginning of creation there where God the Father, God the Son, God the Holy Ghost co-existing in power and glory. We have little record of any kind as to how heaven was created. I think God felt it was none of our business. What God felt we needed to know God has told us. We do have a brief description of events that occurred during the creation of the earth however we will discuss that later.

Even though there are many names that have been attributed to God, these only reflects God’s dealings with mankind and His characteristics and attributes. His many names express His heart for mankind. Whatever name you call Him by He is still One and the same. He was in the beginning and shall be forever. God is eternal:

***“Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God” (Psalm 90:2).***

He has always been and shall always be. From the very beginning He was the Almighty and shall ever be. You must understand that the first two people we have a record of ever living here on this earth knew God.



They walked with God “Jehovah”. They talked with God “Jehovah”. They dwelt in His presence! God enjoyed their fellowship. But, because of their curious minds (ever hear the phrase, curiosity killed the cat?), they allowed themselves to be deceived, and sinned, thus death, discord, and rebellion entered this world. They broke the only commandment God had given them; they broke God’s heart. How would you feel if someone you loved with all your heart betrayed you?

We all have experienced a broken heart at one time or another. Maybe you have been betrayed by someone you loved; then you can understand how God felt. Feel His heart; mankind, whom He loved, betrayed Him. He did not take pleasure in punishing man, but it is impossible for God to lie so He had to be true to His Word. He wanted to take care of them, to nurture and shelter them. He had given to mankind everything they would ever have need of. Now He had to drive them out from His presence lest they add evil upon evil and defile His presence even more. All He had supplied for them would be no more! Their punishment would be that they would have to go out from His presence and toil, scratching a living out of the very dirt that they were created from.

Once mankind was driven from God’s presence, because their hearts had been defiled with sin, they became worse and worse. Because their hearts were evil and full of dead works, the very first man ever to be born of a woman, Cain, became a murderer. He slew his only brother, Abel. Mankind was defiled, and the rest of the story goes on to say, because of the sin of one man and woman our world was defiled. Look at the world we live in today. Full of disease and sickness, poverty, famine, lust, anger, pride; on and on and on. Not only had sin entered the world but deception came with sin. Eve was deceived in the beginning and the devil has deceived mankind ever since. Deception entered the hearts and minds of mankind. Because of their lack of understanding, and the fact that God cannot be seen with the natural eye, man has struggled with deceived instead of seeking the living God (Jehovah) they sought to create their own gods. They were lifeless and useless, but they were gods that they could easily relate to and understand with their finite minds and

humanistic reasoning. They would create gods that represented and resembled things they would come into contact in their daily lives, gods they could easily understand and have something in common with. If something had a great influence on their lives or was so powerful that they had no control over it, that something would become a god to them. For instance, water, rain, fire, and wind these are elements of nature which they had no control over. Gods were created to represent water, air, land, fire, rivers, volcanoes; the list is endless. Creating gods to represent these elements was a way of giving them a sense of having the ability to control the uncontrollable.

Of, course man in their wildest imaginations could never control these powerful instruments of nature that God created. These are the very gifts God (Jehovah) has given to man to sustain life here on the planet earth. However, mankind, seeing how powerful God's creations were, seeking to understand them with their carnal minds, became foolish and their imaginations were darkened, creating gods to represent these forces of nature, and worshipped the creature over the Creator Who gives all life. Of, course they used whatever was available such as wood, stone, or clay to create images of their own vain imaginations. However, out of all the gods that mankind has known and created, there is only one true CREATOR of all things. The reason why He is God is because He is the Creator of everything. He is the God that created the heavens, the earth, and the Universe. Everything that you see, hear, touch, feel, and breathe, everything you know that makes up this life, was created by Him, GOD ALMIGHTY. All of creation is His gifts to mankind:

***“For thou (God) hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created” (Revelations 4:11b).***

Only one God has given to mankind the precious gift of life. That is the God of the Bible, Jehovah.

Paul the Apostle pointed out that there is only one true God when he came across an inscription in the city of Athens which said, “TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. This is what he told the men there:

***“.....Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious. For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an***

*altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, Him declare I unto you. God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that He is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though He needed any thing, seeing He giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after Him, and find Him, though He be not far from every one of us: For in Him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device” (Acts 17:22-29).*

God is not some lifeless dead stone or piece of wood, but He is a living deity. Everything we know belongs to God. We are His offspring, His seed, His creation. We are alive because God has given the gift of life to us. No other reason. Even though God has shown himself alive to man over and over, some still doubt the existence of God and the authority of the Bible, even though science itself has proven that the accounts which are written in its pages, are true. Many archaeological diggings have turned up artifacts that prove the Bible is true. God has over and over revealed himself to man. He has done nothing in the dark, but everything is open and revealed to man. He has expressed his heart and love for man all down through the ages, looking upon us with loving kindness and tender mercy. He understands our sorrows and grief. He is not lifeless or unemotional but just the opposite he is rich in compassion. He does not condemn us for sins, because he understands why we do what we do. He only wants to reveal his great love to you and to save you from your sinful self. Because God is truth and is no lie, he must be true to his word, there must be a payment made for disobedience, rebellion, and sin, however God does not want you to pay the penalty. So, he has revealed himself to us such a way so we will learn to love him and by loving him turn from

our sinful way: thus obtain his eternal life, the life he intended us to have from the very beginning.

I want to touch on how God has revealed himself to us. God has revealed Himself to us in three different ways; through nature, through His Word, and through his Son whom we will look at in the next chapter. Because God has so openly revealed himself to man, we cannot ignorantly excuse ourselves and say we don't know of His existence. God has thoroughly made Himself known to man:

***“So that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things” (Romans 1:19-23).***

Jesus Christ the Son of God said these words:

***“And this is life eternal, that they know Thee the only true God,” (John 17:3).***

Life only comes from GOD ALMIGHTY, the God of the Bible. This has been proven over and over. As I write this book, it is estimated that the population of the earth is over 6.8 billion people. That means that there are an estimated 2.3 billion Christians in the world today. That is not counting all the other religions out there. How can 2.3 billion people be wrong? They are not wrong, God is real; He is alive and true.

When we look at the population of the earth, 30% are professing Christians. Are there any other gods that are equal to him? No! He is the only one true God, He is the great I AM! He IS the beginning and the end of all things, all other gods that man has created are false gods. Furthermore, 50% of the population of the world believes in Jehovah God. He may be called by different names, but he is still the one true God.

Because God has so openly revealed Himself there have been many times when God Himself has looked down upon the ignorance of man and jested about how foolish it is for man to worship lifeless, inanimate objects. God speaking through the mouth of Isaiah said:

*“Who hath formed a god, or molten a graven image that is profitable for nothing? Behold, all his fellows shall be ashamed: and the workmen, they are of men: let them all be gathered together, let them stand up; yet they shall fear, and they shall be ashamed together. The smith with the tongs both worketh in the coals, and fashioneth it with hammers, and worketh it with the strength of his arms: yea, he is hungry, and his strength faileth: he drinketh no water, and is faint. The carpenter stretcheth out his rule; he marketh it out with a line; he fitteth it with planes, and he marketh it out with the compass, and maketh it after the figure of a man, according to the beauty of a man; that it may remain in the house. He heweth him down cedars, and taketh the cypress and the oak, which he strengtheneth for himself among the trees of the forest: he planteth an ash, and the rain doth nourish it. Then shall it be for a man to burn: for he will take thereof, and warm himself; yea, he kindleth it, and baketh bread; yea, he maketh a god, and worshippeth it; he maketh it a graven image, and falleth down thereto. He burneth part thereof in the fire; with part thereof he eateth flesh; he roasteth roast, and is satisfied: yea, he warmeth himself, and saith, Aha, I am warm, I have seen the fire: And the residue thereof he maketh a god, even his graven image: he falleth down unto it, and worshippeth it, and prayeth unto it, and saith, Deliver me; for thou art my God” (Isaiah 44:10-17).*

Do you see the ignorance? They use wood to make an image to worship as a god, then take the leftover wood to roast meat and warm themselves. Is it not silly to worship a figure of a man or animal that has no life, no eyes to see with, and no ears to hear with; no ability to give man anything, no ability to answer prayers. Could you imagine praying to a cardboard box? That would be pretty stupid, and yet even in this modern age we live in, there are those who still pray to lifeless objects of their own creations. There are those who have been taken captive by their own imaginations and have exalted self or a man, sports, music, money, fame, even their own sexuality, or some manmade product over God. Their understanding is darkened by deception, to the vanity of worshipping false gods. Their minds are blinded to the ignorance of their ways. Paul the Apostle told us,

***“In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them” (2 Corinthians 4:4).***

It is very clear in the scripture that the “god of this world” whom is Lucifer have multitudes blind to the truth of who God truly is, he does not want man to have a revelation of who God is and how powerful he is. God Jehovah is the only Almighty God. He is the God of Gods. He is the One that rules and reigns, with absolute power above all others. Nothing can exist without Him. You cannot exist without him. For without him, there is no life:

***“In whose hand is the soul of every living thing, and the breath of all mankind” (Job 12:10).***

This God, who has created all things, is so superior, powerful, and mighty, that we cannot even begin to understand even a small measure of His glorious power:

***“For My thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My ways, saith the Lord. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are My ways higher than your ways, and My thoughts than your thoughts” (Isaiah 55:8-9).***

Even though we were created in His image, we have physical limitations. Our physical bodies are restricted to only what God preordained us to experience. We have joy, peace, love, happiness because He has given these precious gifts to us. I wish people would get ahold of the truth that we have nothing outside of God. Our spirits are contained in this physical body.

But He (God) has no physical limitation. He is not bound by the laws of nature, or by any other physical laws. ***“God is a Spirit” (John 4:24)*** He exists in the heavens and operates in the spiritual realm. However, because of His love for man, He has revealed Himself to us openly, in ways we can understand. In the preceding scripture I quoted tells us of how His ways are far above ours. However, in the very next scripture, God, by the prophet Isaiah, described how He reveals Himself to man by using that which man could understand, nature:

***“For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: So shall My Word be that goeth forth out of My mouth: it shall not return unto Me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it” (Isaiah 55:10-11).***

Rain and snow fall and there is nothing we can do to prevent them. They fall to the earth and the earth reaps the benefit. I like how the scripture said, “that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater”. God, realizing that we need to know Him, has revealed Himself to us in such a way so we can understand Him. He brings Himself down to our level of understanding and if we will seek to know Him, the revelation of who He is shall enter our hearts. Opening our minds and revealing all His benefits He has given to us. Only then we will reap the benefits of His precious gifts. Through a revelation of Him, He will totally transform our lives, filling us with joy unspeakable and full of glory! Hallelujah! Then our hearts will shout hallelujah to the great I Am! He has given us all the good things of His kingdom:

***“For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands. Instead of the thorn shall come up the fir tree, and instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle tree: and it shall be to the LORD for a name, for an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off” (Isaiah 55:12-13).***

This is what happens when you allow God’s Word to enter your heart. It begins to produce good things in your life. One thing we must understand is true joy and contentment only comes out of a heart that is fully committed to God. God is a Spirit, and His fellowship is with us in our inward man. He fills our heart with joy if we will let Him in. Only then can He manifest Himself in the physical realm. But He will only do this to those who have allowed Him into their hearts. God is not limited in any way; He has unlimited power. Look at our world, our solar system, and particularly our sun. Think of the power (nuclear power) that is harnessed in that star (our sun). Mankind, in their wildest imagination

could never, ever begin to create such power. Even though man has discovered nuclear fusion and has harnessed this knowledge to a small degree and has used his knowledge to create the comfort of our modern society. They could never in a million years be able to harness the nuclear power of the sun. Now image a God Who has the power to create thousands upon thousands of stars exactly like it. What an awesome, powerful God He is! From the smallest known living organism to the uncharted regions of the universe, God has created it all.

There are three words that man has attributed to God, which attempts to portray Him in His majestic power:

**“Omnipresent”**

This is the ability to be present everywhere at the same time. This should be no surprise. He is a God who fills the vast areas of space and yet is reflected in the tiniest flower. We are told in the Bible:

*“And blessed be His glorious name forever: and let the whole earth be filled with His glory; Amen, and amen” (Psalm 72: 19).*

*“Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord of hosts: the whole earth is full of His glory” (Isaiah 6:3b).*

His presence fills the heavens and earth. David cried:

*“Whither shall I go from Thy spirit? Or whither shall I flee from Thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, Thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, Thou art there,” (Psalm 139: 7-8).*

There is no where you can hide from His presence. He is everywhere, which is wonderful news to us because no matter what happens in this life, He is always present. He sees all things good and evil, which leads us to:

**“Omniscience”**

The ability to know all things that consist in the heavens and on earth. To know every human integrally. To know the very intent of a man’s heart. To know their feelings, thoughts, desires, and dislikes. It is the ability to know the very heart of a person:

*“For the Word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two edge sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts*



***and intents of the heart. Neither is there any creature that is not manifested in His sight: but all things are naked and open unto His eyes of Him with whom we have to do” (Hebrews 4:12-13).***

God knows all things; He knows the beginning and end of all things. He knows everything about every person past, present, and future. He has the ability to know the very decisions you will make before you make them. He knows what you can and cannot accomplish with your life. You can trust a God Who has all wisdom, knowledge and understanding, and He is willing to give you wisdom, knowledge and understanding. God has told us:

***“If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. But let him ask in faith, (James 1: 6-7a).***

One thing you must understand is that when you ask God for something, if you ask knowing it is His will for you to have it, God will give it to you.

God knows everything about you and your future. He knows what you have need of. You must understand that it is Gods good pleasure that you are living today. He has a very important plan for your life. You are here for a specific reason:

***“.....for thy pleasure they are and were created.” (Revelations 4:11b)***

You are a precious treasure to Him. He, God, will give you everything you need to accomplish His plan for your life. God wants you to have a happy and joyful life. He is your father, and He desires to take care of you. He holds your breath in His hand. He has a wonderful future planned for you, and you can trust Him. He will not fail you.

### ***“Omnipotence”***

This means to have unlimited power. This is always attributed to God because mortal man can never have such power. When you study the creation, you see this power displayed.

He is the divine King of everything. Everything that exists belongs to Him. He is the Almighty that sits upon a throne and rules and reigns in absolute power in his kingdom.

According to God Himself no single man in a body of flesh and blood has ever seen His face. In fact, no man can look upon Him and live. Moses, who was a chosen vessel of God, desired to see Him, but God told him:

***“And He said, Thou canst not see my face: for there shall no man see Me and live.” (Exodus 33:20)***

However, God, “whom Moses knew face to face” meaning he knew him intimately, did give Moses the gift of allowing him to see His back parts. Just seeing His back parts made Moses face to shine, to the point the children of Israel dare not look upon him.

The prophet Isaiah had the privilege of being lifted into the heavenly and seeing God in all His glory. He gave us this description:

***“ I saw also the Lord sitting upon a throne. High and lifted up, His train, (robe) filled the temple” (Isaiah 6:1b).***

Isaiah was allowed to catch a glimpse of God in His glory. God has from time to time given man the gift of allowing them to experience and even “see” His glory.

When Solomon finished the temple, God filled it with His glory. I remember an incident that occurred in one of the services I was hosting. We were having just a normal Sunday night service, but something was about to happen that was going to change that normal service into a service I will remember all my life. There were just a handful of people, perhaps thirty or so, present. As we began our service, lifting our voices up in praise and worship to God, He showed up! As I stood behind the pulpit feeling His mighty presence, I announced to the congregation, “God is here!” As soon as I spoke these words, I melted to the floor as every ounce of strength left my body. I was totally engulfed in the mighty presence of God. All I could do was weep and weep and weep! I was aware that some others were experiencing the same thing from the sounds of joyful weeping floating in the air. I lost all track of time. The only thing I was aware of was the beautiful feeling of God’s love for me. I felt no guilt, shame, or condemnation; but I felt totally accepted just the way I was. This is exactly the way God feels toward you. He loves you the way you are. He totally accepts you for who you are, and He understands

everything about you. He understands your ups and downs, comings and goings, your fears and yes doubts. Listen to His words to you:

***“Like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear Him. For He knoweth our frame; He remembered that we are dust. But the mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear him” (Psalm 103:13-14,17a).***

He loves you, for who you are. He does not criticize, condemn, nitpick, or find fault with you, but offers to you His precious gifts of mercy and forgiveness. To them that have respect for Him, His mercy is offered forever:

***“The LORD taketh pleasure in them that fear Him, in those that hope in His mercy” (Psalm 147:11).***

Even though God has many attributes, such as mercy, compassion, loving-kindness, goodness, gentleness, these all come out of His heart of love for you. He loves mankind with the greatest love man could ever know:

***“God is Love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. Herein is our love made perfect” (1 John 4: 16b-17a).***

The most perfect love one can ever experience is the love of God. This is God’s gift to man, unconditional love. Only by seeking after Him and dwelling in God’s presence can one experience this perfect love. By dwelling in God can we come to a place of having perfected love for ourselves, God, and others. What an awesome thought, that this great Creator of all things, who has unlimited power to make life or even destroy it, would even consider man, in His sinfulness. He has demonstrated His love to man by humbling himself and coming down to their level of existence just so he can express His desire to love them unconditionally. He gives us His love without measure and all He wants man to do is just love Him also. How can one reject such a God as that! He desires to be the delight of your soul; your everlasting King; how he longs to embrace you. Through his Son Jesus Christ he said:

***“Come unto me, all ye the labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest” (Matthew 11:28).***

How my heart sings to Him songs of love and admiration. Words cannot express the hunger and longing I have for Him. He is the lover of my soul.

God is a God of love, not some cold emotionless God of wood or stone. He is alive and real. As a God of love, He experiences happiness, joy, but also anger, hurt, sorrow, and grief. God wants only the best for man and gives every man the right to live a peaceful life, enjoying the fruits of His hands:

***“For the LORD taketh pleasure in His people: He will beautify the meek with salvation” (Psalm 149:4).***

Hear the heartbeat of God, everything He has done is so He can be with you forever. You are His most precious treasure, a priceless jewel. He desires to hold you and comfort you, to engulf you with His priceless gift of love. Paul tells us:

***“But God, who is rich in mercy, for His great love wherewith He loved us, even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened (made alive) us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) and hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of His grace (love) in His kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourself: it is the gift of God” (Ephesians 2:4-8).***

Did you read what it said, “in ages to come He desires to show us the riches of His favor, His love and kindness” to us! To you! Can you image spending eternity with One who will do exceedingly above all He has promised us? 10,000 times 10,000 years from now you could be dwelling in the glory and love of your Father God, and that will only be the beginning of His riches that He desires to give us. The best of God’s gifts are yet to come!

***“---in thy presence is the fullness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore” (Psalms 16:11).***

**SECTION # 3**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON #15**  
**GOD THE SON - JESUS CHRIST**

*“For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through Him might be saved.” (John 3:16-17)*

“Crucify Him!! Crucify him!!” The crowd roared. Jesus just stood there and hardly said a word, a Lamb led to the slaughter, the prophet had said. He was not guilty of any crime, yet there He was standing before an angry mob, who was demanding His life! The apostle Peter said:

**“Who, when He was reviled, reviled not again; when He suffered, He threaten not, but committed Himself to Him that judgeth righteously” (2 Peter 2:23).**

In all the accusations they accused Him of the only one He was guilty of was loving people. He was only guilty of being “Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.” (Matthew 1:23b) and God is love. His crime was loving people, for this they desired his life. Jesus Christ, the Son of God was the earthly name given unto the second in the eternal Godhead. The scriptures tell us:

**“For in Him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily” (Colossians 2:9).**

Jesus was all three of the Godhead in one, this Man was God in a body of flesh and blood. He represented the Kingdom of God and in Him was contained the fullness of God’s glory, grace, power and might. Even though He is mentioned numerous times in the Old Testament and is believed to have appeared to many of the great patriarchs of faith such as Abraham, Joshua, and others, we truly did not come to know Him until He came to dwell among men. John, who Jesus chose to be an apostle said:

**“.....and the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth” (John 1:14).**

The one who had created all life, the very essence of God came and dwelt among men, they beheld the glory of Jehovah in the face of a Man. He is described many times in the scriptures as the Son of man, but He was oh, so much more. He was the Son of God! What a wonderful precious gift He was to mankind! He was God’s gift of love, grace, compassion, loving kindness, and mercy to man.

His character and personality resonated love. He was so wonderful that multitudes were drawn to His message of hope. He healed the sick, cast out devils, cleansed the leper, made the lame walk, raised the dead, and opened blind eyes. Virtue flowed from His body to those who hungered for righteousness. He was a bright light in a world of gross darkness. He came so that mankind could be reconciled to God the Father. So, we could receive the gift of reconciliation. God the Father’s precious gift to man was salvation through God the Son.

The name Jesus was given to Him by Joseph as instructed by the angel of God and means “salvation”. Christ means anointed, thus when the two are combined the meaning is “anointed to bring salvation”. That is exactly what Jesus came to do. Jesus came to save mankind from their sin, to save them from the judgment of God, to turn men’s hearts back to God, to reveal the heart of God to man. He stood in the gap and held up the hedge, as the mediator between mankind and God:

**“For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the Man, Christ Jesus” (1 Timothy 2:5).**

Jesus was the fulfillment of God’s Word to His chosen people, the Israelites. But even more he came as a savior also to the gentiles. When Adam sinned, God prophesied that there would come a day when the serpent’s head would be crushed, and that it would be done by the seed of a woman. Jesus Christ crushed the serpent’s (devil) head by fulfilling every word, jot and tittle spoken of Him in the law and by the prophets. He was anointed to do the works of God. The scriptures tell us:

**“How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with Him” (Acts 10:38).**

Jesus came to destroy the works of the devil in the lives of God’s people, to fill their heart with hope and faith once again in their heavenly Father. From the day God spoke the prophecy to Adam, God’s plan of salvation began.

All through the Old Testament we are told of how God raised up a people and about His dealings in their lives. Through the mouths of His many prophets God spoke, pointing forward to the One who would come and be the fulfillment of the prophecy, delivering His people from the curse unleashed upon the whole of mankind through the transgression of Adam. Jesus was the One, the Messiah, Emmanuel, Deliverer, the Savior of Gods people, and fulfillment of the promise. He was the only begotten of God. The word begotten means to be born of, or to be birthed from. In the fullness of time, God chose a young woman by the name of Mary. He caused her to conceive through the Holy Spirit. This is the account we have in the scriptures:

**“And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth. And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God. And , behold, thou shall conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a Son, and shalt call his name JESUS. Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man. And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God. For with God nothing shall be impossible” (Luke 1:26,30,31,34,35,37).**

Of, course the news of Mary being pregnant before marriage caused no little stir among the people. Tongues began to wag, adultery must be the case, and reproach was proclaimed. This was a serious offence according to the laws of Moses, a death sentence by stoning. However, God stepped in and instructed Joseph to marry her so she would not be a public example. God spoke to him and said:

**“Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife; for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost” (Matthew 1:20b).**

Joseph married Mary and due to a census for taxation purposes in all the land (which was also a fulfillment of prophecy) they traveled to Bethlehem where Jesus was born in a stable surrounded by the humblest of God’s creation. After that they traveled into Egypt, (at God’s instruction) where God preserved his Son from a wicked king.

Now Jesus was not just an ordinary child. Not only did He have His earthly mother and father to teach and raise him according to the ordinances and laws of Moses, but God himself overshadowed Him revealing to Him the glory and mysteries of His kingdom. The prophet Isaiah spoke of his upbringing hundreds of years before his birth:

**“Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call His name Immanuel. Butter and honey shall He eat, that He may know to refuse the evil, and choose the good.” (Isaiah 7:14-15)**

When you look at this scripture you must understand that it is not talking about natural food, but spiritual. Butter is the oil of milk. It is the richest part of the milk. Milk represents God’s Word. Honey represents the sweetness of God’s presence. God fed Jesus with the riches of His presence and revelation concerning the kingdom of God. So even at a very young age He astonished many with His wisdom and understanding of things pertaining to the kingdom of God. When he was twelve years old, He sat in the temple with the elders:

**“And all that heard Him were astonished at His understanding and answers” (Luke 2:47).**

Very little is mentioned in the Bible about Jesus as a child. However, when the time was right God launched Him into the ministry. At about the age of thirty Jesus came to his cousin John (the Baptist) to be baptized. When John saw Him coming, he declared:

**“Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world” (John 1:29).**



John had already received a revelation as to who Jesus was. As John baptized Jesus something amazing happened, God expressed His delight in His Son:

**“And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is My beloved Son, in Whom I am well pleased” (Matthew 3:17).**

At that very moment Jesus received His anointing in all fullness. It came upon Him without measure. He was truly anointed above his brethren. Jesus then went through forty days and nights of temptation but came out victorious. After defeating the devil in the wilderness, Jesus came preaching the gospel in the power of the Spirit crying:

**“Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand” (Matthew 4:17).**

As Jesus walked among the people, compassion and love poured from His heart for them, as He demonstrated the true heart of God. He was not like anyone the people had heard but spoke with authority. He was not cold and lifeless as the religious leaders. He brought light where there was darkness, hope to the hopeless, faith to the faithless. Many were drawn to His message of God’s love and salvation. Multitudes came from all walks of life to hear His simple message of God’s love:

**“And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people. And His fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto Him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatic, and those that had the palsy; and He healed them” (Matthew 4:23-24).**

Great was the anointing upon Him to destroy the works of the devil. Even though Christ possessed all the characteristics and attributes of God the Father, and even proclaimed to the people that when you had seen Him you had seen the father, there was something else very special about this God who became flesh. He lived in a fleshly body and experienced all the suffering of humanity, cold and heat, sorrow, and joy, hurt, anger, and laughter. He understood the pain of humanity. The scriptures tell us:

**“He Himself also is compassed with infirmity” (Hebrews 5:2).**

He understands mankind, therefore He had a heart of compassion. In everything He did He showed He was moved by the sufferings of the people. He reached out to them in compassion and mercy. He could feel their pain, their suffering, their sorrow:

**“.....touched by the feeling of our infirmities” (Hebrews 4:15).**

He came with love in His heart and healing in His wings. He does not condemn mankind for their sins, because He understands why men do the things they do. The scriptures say:

**“For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through Him might be saved” (John 3:17).**

This was clearly seen in Him. He was a friend of sinners. Those who the religious group held as vile and unclean Jesus loved and accepted. He was a friend of sinners, publicans, and harlots. Those who were rejected by others He was a friend to. Many times when he was invited to go and dine with sinners He accepted, in spite of the fact that He was condemned by the religious for it. He was a Man who reached out to the hurting, wounded, and rejected. Even today His heart has not changed. His heart is full of compassion. The scriptures tell us:

**“For the Son of man is not come to destroy men’s lives, but to save them” (Luke 9:56).**

**“For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost”(Luke 19:10).**

But in spite of the prophecies in the Old Testament concerning His birth and ministry, in spite of the fact that His message was one of love, in spite of all He did for the people, and how He healed the sick, cast out devils, performed the miraculous, still many did not accept Him:

**“He came unto His own, and His own received Him not” (John 1:11).**

He lived a simple life traveling from city to city preaching the gospel of the kingdom. He often did not have the comfort of a warm bed or the luxuries of life, but His was the cold ground for a bed and the rocks for His pillow. His message was a very simple one. God was our Father, and we were His most precious treasure-children, come back to Him and live, be reconciled to God. He proclaimed you must be born again by the

Spirit of God. You must have a change in the inward man. This is described in other places in the scripture as a circumcised heart, a regenerated heart, a renewed heart. How-ever it may be described it still means to be changed by the power of God. Jesus told the people to come to a Father Who loves you and desires to give you eternal life. Jesus came to give this eternal life to mankind:

**“For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord” (Romans 6:23).**

**“And this is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.” (John 17:3)**

Jesus explained to the people that He was the Door; He was the way to the Father. They could not understand His message. How can He be the only way to God? Many today still will not accept the truth that Jesus is the only way. They did not then, and many today do not accept this truth because they cannot understand the plan of God. When Adam sin it separated mankind from God because God is holy; because He is life, because He is light. He can have no dealings with sin, darkness, or death. He cannot look upon sin.

From the very beginning, because Adam transgressed the only commandment God had given him, God needed a way for mankind to be reconciled to Him. So, God, through Moses, first gave man the laws of animal sacrifice. Through those laws mankind could be once again made acceptable unto God. However, they were only a shadow of good things to come. Let us look at how Paul the apostle explains it:

**“For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. For then would they not have ceased to be offered? Because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience (guilt, condemnation) of sins. But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. Wherefore when He cometh into the world, He saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared Me. In burnt offerings and sacrifice for sin**

**thou hast had no pleasure. Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me,) to do thy will, O God. Above when He said , Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offering for sin Thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein; which are offered by the law; Then said he, Lo, I come to do Thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that He may establish the second. By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all” (Hebrews 10:1-10).**

The sacrifice of animals was only temporary; they could never perfect a person. God the Father had a better plan, a more loving plan, a perfect plan. He (God) would bring salvation. He himself would provide a perfect sacrifice, one without spot or blemish. Remember what I said about how God has revealed Himself to us in three ways; first in nature and secondly through His Word. The third way is through His Son Jesus Christ. The scriptures tell us:

**“For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ” (2 Corinthians 4:6).**

God has revealed Himself to us through Jesus. God’s nature, characteristic, and attributes are clearly seen in Him. Jesus was the Lamb of God that would take away the sins of the world by giving of Himself. He would take away the old covenant of animal sacrifice and of going through the high priest. Because God is truth and is no lie, he must be true to his word, there must be a payment made for disobedience, for rebellion and sin, however God does not want you to pay the penalty. He would make a new covenant by becoming the Sacrifice for all sin. God Himself would take this precious Lamb and allow Him to be killed by man. Through His blood would be redemption for sin:

**“In whom we have redemption through His blood, even the forgiveness of sins” (Colossians 1:14).**

Understand what this means. For you to have forgiveness for your sin, Jesus had to pay the penalty for your sins. He had to shed His blood. He was led as a lamb to the slaughter. His was not an easy death, but a violent, cruel death of betrayal, mockery, and agony. He stood alone

before the dogs of this world and they murdered Him. This was the reason He came into this world to die for mankind. In the hours before that final night, He had separated Himself for a time of prayer. There in the garden was the most tremendous struggle a man had ever experienced. Such agony can be hardly understood; that a man would be under such physical strain that blood vessels would burst and be mingled with sweat falling to the ground in great drops. The moment of destiny had come. Jesus, knowing what lay ahead, cried out:

**“Father, if Thou be willing, remove this cup from Me: nevertheless not My will but Thine, be done” (Luke 22:42).**

We all have a divine destiny, a time and a season that God has placed in our lives. For some it may be only a moment of time in God’s vast history. To others it may be a season of time. Abraham’s was to birth a nation; Moses’ was to deliver God’s people from Egyptian bondage; Joshua’s was Jericho; Gideon’s was to defeat the Midianites; Samson’s was pulling the house down on the lords of the Philistines; David’s was to be king over God’s people and to bring the Ark of the Covenant back into Jerusalem; Mary’s was to give birth to the Son of God; Paul’s was to preach the gospel to the gentiles; John the Beloved’s was to write the book of Revelation. In all of these examples, and many more, God hand-picked each of them to be a part of His divine plan and purpose. All of these people had visitations from God to equip them to accomplish their destiny. Sometimes we feel we have failed God in one way or the other, but this is because we don’t fully understand God’s plan. How can you fail God when God has total control of all things, and God has the ability to accomplish all things? God has the ability to use the ungodly or even animals to accomplish His plans. Do you think God’s purpose and plan for mankind depends upon you? No! It depends upon God’s ability. We must fully trust God that the purpose and plan he has for your life will come to fruition. God will have complete control and will use your vessel to accomplish His will. Even when it seems we have failed, God still has a plan. The scriptures tell us:

**“And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose.**

**For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren. Moreover whom He did predestinate, them He also called: and whom He called, them He also justified: and whom He justified, them He also glorified. What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?” (Romans 8:28-31).**

Samson is one who some consider a failure, but don't you think that God knew what was going to happen in his life? If he had never failed would he have been in the position to bring the house down upon the lords of the Philistines? I don't think so! If his hair had not been cut, he would not have been taken and he would not have been in the position to bring down the house upon the Philistines. The only reason the lords of the Philistines were together was to mock him. Remember the prophecy over his life:

**“.....and he shall begin to deliver Israel out of the hand of the Philistines” (Judges 13:5b).**

This is exactly what he did! So, the question is, did Samson have his greatest victory after his greatest failure? Yes. Was that God's plan? We may never know. Now, I am not saying we have to fall to be able to achieve great things for God, but what I am saying is the more we rely upon God's ability the greater things we can accomplish. Often, when we feel we have failed Him is when we rely upon God the most. In my weakness, He is strong, and where much is forgiven, there is much love. Peter denied Christ three times, but it broke his pride.

**“And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny Me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly” (Matthew 26:75).**

Peter then became one of the pillars in the first church. When we realize that we don't have the ability to accomplish God's plan for our lives is when we begin to operate in His strength, might, ability, wisdom, or knowledge. We then become vessels of all mighty God, flowing in the Spirit of the living God. When Jesus came to that moment in His life the reason He was born. There in the garden of agony, the scriptures say:

**“And there appeared an angel unto Him from heaven, strengthening Him” (Luke 22:44).**

This was the reason He could endure the entire great physical trauma inflicted upon Him. He was strengthened therefore was able to accept the cup of God’s wrath that was poured out upon Him for the sins of the world. One of the Old Testament prophets foretold of His sufferings:

**“Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon Him; and with His stripes we are healed. Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise Him; He hath put Him to grief: when thou shalt make His soul An offering for sin, He shall see of the travail of His soul, and shall be satisfied: by His knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for He shall bear their iniquities. -- and He bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors” (Isaiah 53:4-5,10a,11,12b).**

He endured much in the last few hours of his life. He was mocked, slapped, His beard was plucked out, 39 stripes were laid across His back, a crown of thorns was thrust into His skull, He bore His cross on His blood stained back until He fell beneath the weight of it, then He was nailed to that cross and hung up to die like a common criminal. In the last few moments of His life as He hung there on the cross, half dead, He felt so much despair and loneliness that he cried:

**“E’li, E’li, la’ma sabachtha’ni that is to say, My God, my God, why hast Thou forsaken Me?” (Matthew 27:46b).**

Jesus cried out to God, “Don’t leave me!” “God, don’t forsake me!” Have you ever felt that way? God where are you? Have you ever gone through something and you felt God was nowhere to be found? Well, that’s how Jesus felt. However, God never left Him, because then He would not be true to His Word. God has told us in His Word:

**“I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee” (Hebrews 13:5b).**

It is impossible for God to lie. Every time they slapped Jesus God felt it! Every time they plucked his beard, God felt it! the beating and 39

stripes, the crown of thorns, as He bore the cross, when they drove the nails into His hands and feet as He hung on the cross dying, God was there! And God is with you; he has seen every tear you have shed. He has felt every heartache you have endured. He has seen every time you have been rejected and hurt, He has heard every cry of pain and agony from your heart. He has heard every evil word spoken against you. He has seen every trial, every tribulation, every time you have faced persecution. You are His dear child, and he loves you. You can trust Him no matter what happens in life. He will not fail you. How did Jesus endure? He knew God; He trusted His Father. David prophesied concerning the trust Jesus had in his Father:

**“For Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer Thine Holy One to see corruption” (Psalm 16:10).**

God was there all the time and God is with you all the time even when you think you failed him.

Then Jesus died!!

It was accomplished!!

The price had been paid!!

The bible says,

**“there was darkness over all the land” (Matthew 27:45). Suddenly the earth began to move, “the earth did quake, and the rocks rent” (Matthew 27:51).**

God was there!!

**“Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the son of God” (Matthew 27:54).**

Even the men that had murder him knew God was there. What we need to understand is that when God visits a place, his presence is so strong that it will totally saturate the very atmosphere and ground. We have many accounts of God visiting the sons of man, God told Moses to take off his shoes when he was in his presence, even the ground he stood on was holy. When Solomon built the temple the glory of God, filled that place, so that the minister could not minister. God is so powerful that



when he shows up everything is affected by his dominating glory. We have an example in the Old Testament how a man can be so full of God's presence, that even his bones can bring life:

**“And Elisha died, and they buried him. And the bands of the Moabites invaded the land at the coming in of the year. And it came to pass, as they were burying a man, that, behold, they spied a band of men; and they cast the man into the sepulcher of Elisha: and when the man was let down, and touched the bones of Elisha, he revived, and stood up on his feet” (2 Kings 13:20-21).**

God's presence was so powerful upon the earth when Jesus was crucified that the rock cried out:

**“And the graves were opened; and the bodies of the saints which slept arose, And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many” (Matthew 27:52-53).**

The presence of God being there upon the earth raised many of the saints from the dead because they knew God and their spirits were in tune with God's resurrecting power. The same must hold true to us also, Now I want to explain to you something of great significance. In the Old Testament God had instructed Moses to build him a sanctuary; a place where God could dwell among His people. In this sanctuary would be the Ark of the Covenant and above it would be the mercy seat where the glory dwelt, where God said He would,

**“meet with thee, and I will commune with thee above the mercy seat” (Exodus 25:22).**

There at the entry into this holy place was a veil. This was a barrier between God and His people where only the High Priest was allowed to go:

**“ And after the second veil, the tabernacle which is called the Holiest of all; But into the second went the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and for the errors of the people” (Hebrews 9:3,7).**

This veil kept God's people out. However, when Jesus died, God stepped into this place:

**“And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom” (Matthew 27:51).**

God, showing all was accomplished when He went into the very Holy of Holies, rent the veil from top to bottom, thus signifying through Jesus we have access into the very presence of God. After Jesus was crucified, they laid him in a tomb but three days later the Father resurrected Him. He then proved himself alive to the disciples by many infallible proofs for forty days. In that time, he uprooted their fears and doubt. Instructing them to wait for the promise He had told them about. Then as they stood and watched He ascended into heaven back to the glory He had with the Father before the foundation of the earth. He now sits at the right hand of the Father. His job is not over yet, because even now He prays for His people. We are told:

**“Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by Him, seeing He ever liveth to make intercession for them” (Hebrews 7:25).**

Now we, through Jesus Christ, have access unto God. Into the very Holy of Holies, we can sup with God, commune with God. By the redemptive blood of Christ, we who are guilty are made just before God. The verdict is in, we are guilty and deserve to be punished, but another has taken our punishment and we are free from the penalty of sin. We are free from the payment due because of our sin. We have been purchased with His precious blood. No more do we have to bring a sacrifice to a priest. We can draw nigh unto God through the precious blood of Jesus:

**“But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ” (Ephesians 2:13).**

Not only did He save us from our sin, but through Him we are made acceptable unto God:

**“For He hath made Him to be sin for us, Who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him” (2 Corinthians 5:21).**

We, through Christ, are made righteous before God. What this means is that when God looks at you, He does not see your faults, failures, mistakes, errors, weaknesses, sins, transgressions, or iniquities. All He

sees is the righteousness of Jesus because you are clothed in the righteousness of Jesus. Now let's go one more step. Not only are we made righteous in Christ, but we are also Holy before God. When you accept His sacrifice for your sins you become "joint-heirs with Christ"

**(Romans 8:17b). You take on the very character and attributes of Christ. "If the root (Christ) be holy, so are the branches" (Romans 11:16b).**

Now we are His righteousness, His holiness, His fruit, His offering to God, we are joint-heir to all His characteristics:

**"There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, (Romans 8:1a).**

Now! All guilt and condemnation has been removed and we have confidence and boldness through the blood of Jesus. Now we can boldly go into the Holy of Holies where the shekinah glory dwells. The scriptures say:

**"Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus" (Hebrews 10:19).**

All of our sins are forgiven, and we are acceptable unto God. He has given to us the power to become the sons of God. Therefore, we can cry Abba Father. We have become the sons and daughters of God through Christ. We are acceptable unto God. He is our Father through Christ:

**"But as many as received Him, to them gave He the power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His name" (John 1:12).**

He did all of this just so you could be saved. He took all of our sins, iniquities, transgression, sicknesses, diseases and infirmities upon His body. He became the sacrifice for our sins. He was the Lamb of God, slain from the foundation of the earth. God laid the penalty of our sins upon Him. We are told:

**"But God commendeth His love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. Much more then, being now justified by His blood, we shall be saved from wrath through Him" (Romans 5:8-9).**

Through Christ we have received the precious gifts of salvation, mercy, love, compassion, loving kindness, righteousness, and holiness. On the night Jesus was betrayed He sat down with his twelve apostles to enjoy a meal with them one last time, He told them He would not leave them comfortless, but He would send the comforter, the Holy Ghost. Even in the last few hours of His life he was concerned about His people. The same still holds true today. He is concerned about you; you are the apple of his eye; He loves you so very much that words cannot even begin to measure the fullness of His love. His passion now is to look over the church and to prepare a place for them until the appointed time. Then the Father will tell Him to go and get His people. At that time, He will gather His elect from the four corners of the earth and carry them to a place of safety. For seven years His bride will feast with Him, at the marriage supper of the Lamb. On the night Jesus was betrayed He took bread and wine instructing the apostles to eat and drink. Let's read this account:

**“And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is My body. And He took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is My blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in My Father's kingdom” (Matthew 26:26-29).**

If you'll notice, He told them He would not drink of the fruit of the vine until He drinks it with us in His Father's kingdom. The reason why is because wine was a very important part of the Jewish culture. Wine was drunk at weddings, celebration, and festivals. What Jesus was saying by that statement was that there would be no great celebrations or festivals in heaven until the day He brings His bride home. Then Jesus with His bride will share the fruit of the vine together. The time is near for Jesus to return and take His bride home; to share the fruit of the vine with His overcomers; you, His beloved. The question is are you ready? The bible clearly tells us the way is narrow and the gate is straight and only a few will find it. Let us always pray that we will be counted worthy to enter into the rest of the Lord!

**SECTION # 3**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON #16**  
**ARCHANGEL- SERAPHIM ANGELS**

*“And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him...”*

*(Revelation 20:1-2)*

“Massive, Mighty, Warriors” are these powerful, magnificent creations. In the very beginning when God created all things in heaven, He created angels. These wonderful, marvelous creations of beauty and splendor were created as servants. They serve God in every area of His Kingdom. Angels are mentioned hundreds of times in the Bible. They are a very intricate part of God’s Kingdom and have always played a important parts in the lives of God’s people. No doubt they number in the billions and maybe even trillions. They are a very important vital part of God’s Kingdom, because they are the workers. They serve God in every level of His government; from the throne, all the way down to watching over the heirs of salvation, to even holding at bay the evil powers of the Devil. These wonderful, beautiful creatures are gifts from God to man. We are told:

**“Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?” (Hebrews 1:14).**

God has commanded them to watch over those who will inherit eternal life. The first class of angels we want to look at are Archangels. As far as we know, these are the highest-ranking angels in God’s Kingdom. There is little mentioned in the Bible about these powerful

creatures. However, from what is mentioned we can learn a lot. We have no way of knowing just how many there are of these Archangels. I believe there are numerous. God did not feel it was any of our business to give us such information. He also did not give us much information on how powerful these creatures are. This is probable because He knew man would begin to worship them as gods, (which some already do) and God will not share His glory with any angels. There are some secular religious societies that list several. But as far as the Bible is concerned though we find only a few mentioned. However, from what little we do read, we can come to conclusion that there are many more. Looking at the scripture in Daniel 10:13, it says there are chief princes which would indicate many. The word Archangel is mentioned only a couple of times in the Bible. Let us read:

**“Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, he disputed about the body of Moses durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee” (Jude: 9).**

This angel had all the power of heaven behind him. However, he did not even rebuke in his own name or power, but in the name of the Lord, he knew that the God of heaven and of the angelic host would back him in all their power because he was on assignment from God.

Michael the Archangel is mentioned in other locations in the Bible also, mainly the Book of Daniel. From these scriptures we learn much about this massive, powerful angelic being. Let us read in Daniel:

**“And, behold, a hand touched me, which set me upon my knees and upon the palms of my hands. And he said unto me, O Daniel, a man greatly beloved, understand the words that I speak unto thee, and stand upright: for unto thee am I sent. And when he had spoken this word unto me, I stood trembling. Then said he unto me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that thou didst set thine heart to understand, and to chasten thyself before God, thy words were heard, and I am come for thy words. But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me one and twenty days: but lo, Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me, and I remained there with the Kings of Persia. Now I am come to make thee understand what shall befall thy**

**people in the latter days: for yet the vision is for many days. But I will shew thee that which is noted in the scripture of truth: and there is none that holdeth with me in these things, but Michael your prince” (Daniel 10:10-14,21).**

**“And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people,” (Daniel 12:1).**

In these scriptures we see another angel mention, Michael and because of his sheer power no doubt he also was an Archangel. From the scriptures we learn that Michael was around apparently before Moses was, and that he has power to stand against even Satan himself. In Daniel, it tells us that he alone stood against the kings of Persia, (prince or kings of Persia is a name given to fallen angels who had evil influence over the Persian Emperor) which indicates he stood against more than one fallen angel there. Michael also was only one of the two that God had given revelation to concerning the future of God’s people. It also mentions that in the end this Michael will stand for and fight for God’s people. We see this prophecy in the Book of Revelation:

**“And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven” (Revelation 12:7-8).**

Now some may say this Michael is the incarnate Christ. However, the scripture says that Michael has the title of a great prince. Jesus Christ is not the great prince. He is the King of Kings and Lord of Lords. So, this Michael is not Jesus but an Archangel of great power and authority in God’s kingdom.

The next Archangel we will look at is Gabriel. Even though he is not mentioned in the bible as an Archangel, from his description he would surely qualify. Even his name means strength or chief. Even with the limited information we have on this angel contained in the Bible, we can clearly see how God used him. He is first mentioned in the book of Daniel. Let us read:

**“And I heard a man’s voice between the banks of Ulai, which called, and said, Gabriel, make this man to understand the vision. So**

**he came near where I stood: and when he came, I was afraid, and fell upon my face: but he said unto me, Understand, O son of man: for at the time of the end shall be the vision. Now as he was speaking with me, I was in a deep sleep on my face toward the ground: but he touched me, and set me upright. And he said, Behold, I will make thee know what shall be in the last end of the indignation: for at the time appointed the end shall be” (Daniel 8: 16-19).**

**“Yea, while I was speaking in prayer, even the man Gabriel, whom I had seen in the vision at the beginning, being caused to fly swiftly, touched me about the time of the evening oblation. And he informed me, and talked with me, and said, O Daniel, I am now come forth to give thee skill and understanding” (Daniel 9:21-22).**

The first thing we see about this angel is his power. When he came near to Daniel, Daniel fell upon his face and was like in a deep sleep. Just by being in the presence of this mighty angel, caused Daniel to lose all physical strength and collapse. However, just one touch from him and his strength returned. We also see that this angel was sent to Daniel to give him the skill of understanding. As humans we are limited in our ability to understand the mysteries of God’s Kingdom. This is because we try to understand heavenly things with humanistic reasoning, so we are limited to comprehend them because of our physical senses. The things of God are revealed only in the Spirit therefore we need God to give us understanding of His mysteries. God will give us revelation so we may receive understanding and knowledge. Gabriel was sent to Daniel to give him knowledge and understanding. In Gabriel’s next encounter with man, we read how he also was sent to give information and give knowledge concerning God’s will. This angel was the one that was chosen of God to announce the births of John the Baptist, and Jesus. First, he was sent to the father of John the Baptist:

**“But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shall call his name John. And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? For I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that**



**stands in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings. And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words,” (Luke 1:13,18-20).**

This mighty Archangel had come from the very presence of God and his words carried so much weight that even the slightest unbelief was dealt with severely. Zacharias remains dumb for the whole term of Elisabeth’s pregnancy. Then on the day John was born his tongue was loosed and Zacharias named his son John. After Gabriel visited Zacharias, he then went to Mary, the soon to be mother of Jesus:

**“And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, to a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin’s name was Mary” (Luke 1:26-27).**

So, we can clearly see that this angel Gabriel was one that God used to make known the mysteries of God to individuals. To announce His will and plans to those He has chosen to be a part of His kingdom. God uses them to carry messages because of their sheer strength and power. When God releases His word, the devil will try everything he can to hinder it from reaching those to whom it is sent, because he knows God’s Word brings life into the heart of the believer. These Archangels are mighty warriors that fight against the forces of evil. I believe there are several more mentioned in the Book of Revelation. Let us look at just a couple:

**“And I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud: and a rainbow was upon his head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire: And he had in his hand a little book open; and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth. And cried with a loud voice, as when a lion roareth: And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth lifted up his hand to heaven. And swore by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no more. But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to**

**sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets” (Revelation 10:1-3a ,5-7).**

From his massive size and power and the fact that he was delivering the message of the mysteries of God that he had revealed to his servant, the prophecy was completed, and the end of time was at hand. This angel meets the qualification and fits the description of an Archangel.

The next angel we will look at is not mentioned as mighty or powerful. However, just by looking at his job he was assigned to certainly qualify him as Archangel:

**“And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season” (Revelation 20:1-3).**

This angel in himself has more power than the Devil and all the forces of the Devil. He, according to God’s predetermined plan, will come with great power and might. He will lay hold of the Devil binding him up and casting him into the bottomless pit. So, we see Archangels are a vital part of God’s kingdom. Archangels look over and preserve the kingdom of God which includes you, therefore they are a precious gift from God to us, and you can rest assured when they are needed, they will show up with great power and strength.

## **SERAPHIM ANGELS**

### **Worshipper of God**

**“And I beheld, and heard the voice of many angels round the throne.....and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands.” (Revelation 5:11)**

Holy! Holy! Holy! Is the Lord of host! Cried the beautiful Seraphim, “Thine Iniquity! is taken away, and thy sin purged” these are

the words spoken to the prophet Isaiah by the beautiful, holy Seraphim! Next, we will look at the angels called by the name Seraphim. These heavenly creatures are mentioned only a few times in the scriptures. Apparently, the purpose that they were created was to dwell around the throne and to give God glory, praise, and worship; but as you will see, they play an important role in our ability to stand in God's presence. Let us look at them now:

**“In the year that king Uzziah died I saw also the Lord sitting upon a throne, high and lifted up, and his train filled the temple. Above it stood the seraphims: each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly. And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy is the Lord of hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory. And the posts of the door moved at the voice of him that cried, and the house was filled with smoke” (Isaiah 6:1-4).**

What a privilege it was for the prophet to be allowed to see into the very throne room of God, to see God receiving exaltation and praise, to be in a place where the manifested, visible glory of God could be seen. However, as he stood gazing upon the Lord and the magnificent creature hovering around the throne, they did they not look upon the prophet. Why is that? Because for these creatures to be able to abide in the very presence of God and cry holy, holy, holy, they themselves had to be holy. They could not allow themselves to be defiled. The holiness of God cannot look upon sin.

As Isaiah stood gazing upon God in His glory, what happened to the prophet is something I have seen many times. When someone feels God's wonderful presence and feels his love and holiness radiating from Him, it is so wonderful, that conviction grips their heart. Here God's chosen prophet was convicted of his sinfulness and cried:

**“Then said I, Woe is me! For I am undone; because I am a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for mine eyes have seen the King, the Lord of hosts” (Isaiah 6:5).**

When the prophet heard the cries of worship from these holy angels, he realized that he himself was unclean. He had spoken words that the very holiness of God caused him to be convicted of. The scriptures tell us:

**“For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man,” (James 3:2).**

The prophet knew he had offended with his words; he knew he was not perfect. However, God always has a plan. He is always willing to forgive us and cover us with his grace.

**Then flew one of the seraphims unto me, having a live coal in his hand, which he had taken with the tongs from off the altar: And he laid it upon my mouth, and said, Lo, this hath touched thy lips; and thine iniquity is taken away, and thy sin purged” (Isaiah 6:5-7).**

Looking at the scriptures we clearly see the coal was used to cleanse the prophet of his sins. To understand the significances of the coal and why Isaiah had to have the coal applied to his lips, we look back at the commandments God gave Moses concerning Aaron the high priest. Before Aaron could approach the mercy seat the place where God’s presence dwelt, first he had to offer a sin offering. Then he had to take coal from the altar and put incense upon it, only then could he go into the holy of holies and not die. The scripture reads,

**“And he shall put the incense upon the fire before the Lord, that the cloud of the incense may cover the mercy seat that is upon the testimony, that he die not;” (Leviticus 16:13).**

So, there was a combination of first a sin offering, then fire, and then incense thus allowing him to go in. These three are a shadow or type of repentance, being filled with the Holy Ghost and then praise and worship. No doubt Isaiah as a prophet had obeyed all the laws and commandments of God that had been given Moses concerning bringing a sacrifice to the high priest for his sin offering. However, as we learn under the new covenant these were only a covering. When he entered the presence of God, he realized his unworthiness and he cried “Woe is me! For I am undone.” First, he confessed his sins, then the coal was applied

to his lips so his lips would be cleansed, and he could speak in God's presence.

One of the gifts God has given us is the ability to express our heart through the words we say. God has given us the gift of praise and worship. However, only worship that comes from a true heart of repentance is acceptable. Jesus said:

**“But the hour cometh, and now is, when true worshipers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship Him in spirit and in truth” (John 4:23-24).**

The prophet was purged from his sins by the coal from off the altar. So, he could speak pure sincere words, or true worship. We know on the other hand, that we are purged by the blood that Jesus shed at Calvary, So, when we come to the altar of repentance and confess our sins, He cleanses us from all unrighteousness, then gives us His righteousness,

**“that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him (Jesus Christ), (2 Corinthians 5:21b).**

Therefore, we are made worthy to enter the Holy of Holies by His righteousness and by His precious blood. The scriptures say:

**“Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus,” (Hebrews 10:19).**

So, the three steps of entering the Holy of Holies.

First the Spirit will draw us to a place of repentance, coming to the cross first, where you will be washed in the blood of Jesus. When we are washed in the blood of Jesus, we are covered by the holiness and righteousness of Christ. Then secondly, you must be filled with the Holy Spirit:

**“For through him (Christ) we both have access by one Spirit (Holy Ghost) unto the Father” (Ephesians 2:18).**

Once you are filled with the Holy Ghost only then can you give true worship and praise. Only then can you go into the Holy of Holies before the mercy seat. Only by allowing the Holy Spirit to pray through you can you give true worship to God. The scripture tells us,

**“Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh**

**intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God” (Romans 8:26-27).**

When the Holy Spirit takes the inward cries of your heart before the throne are you worthy to come before the throne. These beautiful Seraphim are also mentioned in the Book of Revelation:

**“And the four beast had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come” (Revelation 4:8).**

Here we have these beautiful Seraphim once again worshipping God. They are described a little differently, but they are still around the throne crying holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty. When you begin to praise and worship with a true heart the Holy Spirit that lives in you will usher you into the very presence of God. I believe the Seraphim have given us the gift of how to worship God with true reverence. They also show us the only way to be able to worship God in spirit and in truth is that we must keep our self-undefiled, separating ourselves from all uncleanness of the flesh and world. If you notice it also said they rest not but praised and worshiped day and night. Should we not also continually worship God giving to Him the fruit of our hearts and lips without ceasing?

If God’s people will learn to praise and worship Him, He will fill our lives with joy beyond measure and peace that the world cannot understand, because God dwells in the midst of praise and worship and in His presence is the fullness of joy. We have been given the gift of access into the very throne room of God. I remember one time I was in prayer and God spoke to me and said, “You are standing before Me right now”. What an awesome thought to know we can go before our Father God and worship Him in spirit and in truth.

**SECTION # 3**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON #17**  
**CHERUBIM ANGELS**

**“For He shall give his angels  
charge over thee, to keep thee  
in all thy ways. They shall bear  
thee up in their hands, lest thou  
dash thy foot against a stone.”  
(Psalms 91:11-12)**

The Flaming Sword!! turned every way, keeping the way of the Tree of Life”!! Never again would man be allowed to defile God’s perfection! The next rank of angels we will look at, are the Cherubim. If I were to describe what they were created to do, it would include many different job descriptions. However, the best description would be that they are the protectors of the precious things of God. I believe Solomon knew this, and that is why when he built the temple there were four Cherubim in the most holy places. The first time they are mentioned is in Genesis. After Adam and Eve had disobeyed the commandment of God, “thou shall not to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil”. God sent them out of the garden, and then placed Cherubim to keep them out:

**“So he drove out man; and He placed at the east of the Garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the Tree of Life” (Genesis 3:24).**

God placed them there to keep man out of the Garden of Eden so they could not eat of the Tree of Life, lest they eat of it and live forever. God used the Cherubim to keep man from going back into his beautiful garden and defiling it.

After God had brought His people out of Egyptian bondage, He took them into the wilderness and there He gave them His laws and ordinances. In the contents of his instructions to Moses, He told him to build a tabernacle. It would consist of an outer court, a holy place and then

the Holy of Holies, which contained the mercy seat. God also instructed Moses to build an Ark and to place it in the Holy of Holies. Inside of the Ark he was to place the golden pot that held manna, Aaron's rod that budded and the tables of the covenant. These three items stood for God's provision for His people, the life He will give His people, and His covenant with His people. Now the lid of the ark was fashioned into like a seat, but in a very unusual way, because on each end of the lid was the image of a Cherubim angel. Let us read how God instructed Moses:

**“And thou shalt put into the ark the testimony which I shall give thee. And thou shalt make a mercy seat of pure gold. And thou shalt make two cherubims of gold, of beaten work shalt thou make them, in the two ends of the mercy seat. And make one cherub on the one end, and the other cherub on the other end: even of the mercy seat shall ye make the cherubims on the two ends thereof. And the cherubims shall stretch forth their wings on high, covering the mercy seat with their wings, and their faces shall look one to another, toward the mercy seat shall the faces of the cherubims be. And thou shalt put the mercy seat above upon the ark; and in the ark thou shalt put the testimony that I shall give thee. And there I will meet with thee, and I will commune with thee from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubims which are upon the ark of the testimony, of all things which I will give thee in commandment unto the children of Israel” (Exodus25:16-22).**

God instructed Moses to build the Ark of the Covenant in such a way that the Cherubim over-shadowed the mercy seat and told him to place two images of Cherubim angels on the top facing each other. This place God would meet His people, this place of Gods glory. This place was so sacred, that only the priest could go into it once a year, and then only after he was covered by the blood of a sacrifice. This mercy seat would be the place God would meet His people, a place of fellowship. Adam had separated man from God by his disobedience in the garden, but now God was offering it back to His people. He had provided them a place to commune with Him.



So, we can see how much of an emphasis God placed upon how the Cherubim angels overshadow the precious things of God. I believe God was demonstrating how he and his angels overshadow the most precious things of His Kingdom, which his people. You are very precious to him. Jesus illustrated this in his teachings. Let's read,

**“Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field. Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: Who, when he hath found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it” (Matthew 13:44-46).**

In these scriptures they tell of a man who sold all he hath so he could purchase a pearl of great price, God has given his only son for you so he could give you the gift of life. God longs to fellowship with you. You are that treasure you are that pearl of great price. We have the gift of entering into the mercy seat overshadowed by the Cherubim angels and by the blood of Christ. The scriptures tell us:

**“Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in the time of need” (Hebrews 4:16).**

Thank God, he has given us these precious angels to overshadow us as we enter the Holy of Holies. Also, as His people, He wants you protected. I believe God has assigned an angel to every person who is called to be an heir of salvation. Rather or not these angels assigned to His people are Cherubim or another class of angel we may never know; but we do know they are here to protect us from any evil the devil would like to inflict upon us. The scriptures say:

**“The angels of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them” (Psalms 34:7).**

God has given to us His precious angels to protect us from harm. His gifts are so wonderful and His love for His people without measure.

***“Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?” (Hebrews 1:14)***

Heirs of Salvation!! Is who they are assigned to! To minister to them as they labor for God! So, far we have examined some of the higher-ranking angels in God's Kingdom. However, there are many other ranks of angels in God's kingdom that serve him in every aspect. They are involved in every area of the lives and affairs of men. We live in a world where we are surrounded by angels. From the time of our first breath, until our very last breath, when they carry us home to be with Jesus, we encounter them many times. I personally have had a few encounters with angels that I will be sharing with you in this section. The scriptures tell us:

**“Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained angels unawares” (Hebrews 13:2).**

You can come into contact with them and not even know it. One thing is for sure if you do come into contact with one it was not an accident but was for a reason. Angels do not reveal themselves just to impress someone, but they are on assignment from God. My first contact with one left a lasting impression upon me. It was right after I first gave my heart to Christ. I was at a prayer meeting in our church. As I was praying, I saw a great vision. It seemed like I left my body and was hovering overhead about 15-20 feet away. I could see myself kneeling in prayer and standing next to me was a huge angel of about eight or nine feet tall. He glowed with the whitest white I had ever seen. He spoke these words to me:

“I have been with you all your life and have protected you. I have brought you back to the Lord, so you can go forth and do a work for the Lord in these last days.”

What an incredible experience that was! I knew that there had been times when I had been in a position where I could have been badly hurt, or even killed. Now I look back and know that there was an angel with me protecting me. God has assigned angels to watch over and to protect the heirs of salvation. You don't know the numerous times you have been protected and guarded by them. These angels also known as guardian angels are probably the best known of all the angels. Even in the secular world there has been much talk about guardian angels. God has sent them to His people to protect them from the evil one. We are told:

**“For He shall give His angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways” (Psalm 91:11).**

This does not mean you can live a carefree, careless life. What this does tell us is that if we, as God’s people, are following Him with our whole hearts. and are not walking in rebellion against God’s will for our lives, God will protect us. However, you must realize that many of God’s people have suffered tremendously. We don’t always understand why things do happen to good people. We live in a world of sin, sickness, disease, and suffering, but we do know that if evil does beset us, we can trust God to bring us out of it. Paul the apostle suffered much at the hands of his brethren, but God always brought him out, until it was time for him to die and then he was beheaded. Many times, in his life the angels did protect him from dying before his time. One such event illustrates God’s protection over him. Paul had been arrested and was to be delivered to Caesar to stand trial. However, the ship they were sailing in got caught in a bad storm. After many days of not even seeing the sun nor stars, and all hope of any of them being saved was lost, Paul stood up and said:

**“And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no loss of any man’s life among you, but of the ship. For there stood by me this night the angel of God, whom I am, and whom I serve, Saying fear not, Paul; thou must be brought before Caesar: and, lo, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee. Wherefore, sirs, be of good cheer: for I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me” (Acts 27:22-25).**

Fourteen days they were at sea in that violent storm. The ship finally ran aground and was destroyed even as Paul had said, but no one lost their lives. But that is not the end of the story. Not only was Paul protected at sea, but also on land. After all the men were safely ashore, they were kindling a fire when a snake bit Paul. Let’s read the account:

**“And when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand. And when the barbarians saw the venomous beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves, No doubt this man is a murderer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffered not to**

**live. And he shook off the beast into the fire, and felt no harm. Howbeit they looked when he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they saw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and said that he was a god” (Acts 28:3-6).**

Paul was not a God, but he was protected by God, and God will protect you also by His angels. As his child he looks over you, watching out for you. Angels have been sent from God to watch over, to protect and to help his people. We are told:

**“Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation” (Hebrews 1:14).**

One time I was praying and seeking God, when I heard a voice speak to me and say:

***“I have been sent from the throne of God to help you in the ministry”.***

I believe it was an angel God had sent from heaven to help me in ministry.

We can see this through all the stories in the Bible, how angels have been assigned to help God’s people through hard times. Angels came to Abraham to announce the fulfillment of the promise. Angels delivered Lot from Sodom and Gomorrah, just moments before God destroyed those cities with fire and brimstone. When Jacob was fleeing for his life from Esau his brother, God comforted him by a dream.

**“And he dreamed, and behold a ladder set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascended and descended on it” (Genesis 28:12).**

From this scripture we can very clearly assert that angels are constantly coming and going from heaven, taking care of God’s business. An angel spoke to Moses out of the burning bush and sent him to deliver God’s people. Angels had been with God’s people all through their wilderness experiences. There are many other encounters recorded in the Bible and they are all very similar. They are here on assignment from God to watch over and protect His people. Angels are all around us all the time. They are God’s gifts to His saints.

**SECTION # 4**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON #18**  
**FALLEN ANGELS - LUCIFER**

*“I beheld Satan as lightning fall  
from heaven.”  
(Luke 10:18)*

Cast out!! Of thy grave like an abominable branch! These words were spoken over the next angel we will look at, Lucifer. Lucifer only seeks to destroy man by separating them from a life with God. God has given us knowledge. He has given knowledge to us of the deception of Lucifer. That way we will not be blindsided by him. In the entire Bible there is not a more tragic story than of the angel we will look at now. This angel is also the most well-known angel of all. However, he is not considered an angel by many because he does not manifest the personality we associate with angels, but just the opposite. Because of his powerful influence through flattery and pervasiveness over man, many consider him a god; but in reality he is an angel, a fallen angel. He was created as the anointed Cherubim, perfect in every way, or so it seemed! Many believe that Lucifer was an Archangel, however, the scripture clearly states he was a Cherubim, as we will see later. Remember back in the previous chapter, I explained that the Cherubim were protectors of the precious things of God and that they dwell in the very throne room of God. This is where Lucifer's abode was, in the very presence of God.

Lucifer was an angel of power and influence. However, because of his beauty he was lifted-up in pride, this was his imperfection and his love for God waxed cold, thus allowing himself to sin against God. Because of his influence and power, he attracted one third of the angels to himself and started a rebellion against God to try and take over God's throne. We have the written record, recorded by two different prophets. Let us read them:

*“Thou sealest up the sun, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty.  
Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was*

*thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created. Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee. By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covered cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground,”* (Ezekiel 28:12a-17a).

*“How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds’ I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit”* (Isaiah 14:12-15).

What a tragic end to one who had such a wonderful beginning. Lucifer was full of beauty, brightness, and wisdom; created to dwell around God’s throne for the purpose of praise and worship, God Almighty. The scriptures said, *“the workmanship of thy tabrets and thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created.”*

So, it is apparent that God created Lucifer for the special purpose to sing. It had been said by someone that he was possibly the praise and worship leader in heaven. Whatever his position was in heaven he allowed himself to be lifted-up in pride and thought he could take over God’s throne. It was for this very reason Lucifer was cast out of heaven. The one thing that Lucifer forgot was that he was created by God; and God has all power and authority, not his creations. He will choose who He gives this power and authority to, and He has the power to strip any of His creation

of everything He has given them at any time. Even though the scriptures say Lucifer was the anointed Cherubim, I believe he was stripped of that position when he was cast out of heaven.

Because he was created by God, Lucifer became an angel of great influence; even to the point of drawing one third of the angels of heaven to follow him. However, Lucifer does not have creative power. In an effort to create a visual image of how Lucifer compares to God, the only thing I could think of would be the sun compared to the moon. All life thrives because of the sun. Without the sun all life on earth would cease to exist! The moon is a cold dead planet, it has no life, the only thing it does is reflect the light of the sun.

Lucifer only has that which God gave him upon his creation. He has used this to lie, steal and destroy. He does have power, which he has used all down through the ages to draw away and to keep man from God. He has the power of suggestion. He persuades through the power of suggestion and persistence. Lucifer is constantly suggesting ideas and thoughts contrary to God's laws, commands, will, and purpose. From the very beginning Lucifer has spewed his lies and through them has destroyed many, by separating them from God. Jesus said:

***“He was a murderer from the beginning, and he abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it” (John 8:44).***

Notice how Jesus pointed out that from the beginning Lucifer was a deceiver. This is how Lucifer convinced Eve into eating of the fruit from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. When God questioned Eve on why she had disobeyed His commandment. She replied:

***“The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat” (Genesis 3:13b).***

This word beguiled means trickery, flattery, to mislead, so it is easy to see how Lucifer deceived Eve through flattery. Lucifer uses this weapon of suggestion against all of mankind. Constantly bombarding their minds through thoughts, hoping to bring man into captivity and hold him there. The scriptures say:

***“But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not,***

***lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them” (2 Corinthians 4:3-4).***

If you notice in the previous scripture, it called Lucifer the “god of this world”, he also has been called the “prince of the power of the air” and “prince of this world.” However, God did not give him this authority or power upon the earth, man did. When God created Adam and Eve, He gave man dominion over everything upon the earth, but when Lucifer deceived Eve and then Adam, all the authority God had given man was handed over to Lucifer. It is very clear that Lucifer has closed the minds of many from believing the good news of God by constantly bombarding them with thoughts contrary to God’s Word. The only way we can overcome these lies from Lucifer, is by having our minds renewed by the word of God and by the Spirit of God. We must change the way we think:

***“And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind,” (Romans 12:2a).***

***“And be renewed in the spirit of your mind” (Ephesians 4:23).***

These thoughts that Lucifer uses to deceive us must not be allowed to enter our minds:

***“Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;” (2 Corinthians 10:5).***

Exactly when Lucifer was first cast out of heaven is not known. We do know he was in the garden when Adam and Eve were. We also know that he had access in and out of heaven, because in several places in the Old Testament we read that he went in and out before God. One of those accounts is in the book of Job. Let us read:

***“Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them” (Job 1:6).***

So, before God ever put Adam and Eve into the garden Lucifer had rebelled against God and had been cast out on to the earth, but he still had access into heaven. However there came a time when God put an end to him having access in and out of heaven. This all happened with the birth of Christ, we find the account of this in the Book of Revelation:



*“And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to His throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. Therefore rejoice ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent. And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and*

***swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth. And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ” (Revelation 12:1-17).***

As we look at these scripture’s we see a massive amount of spiritual history unfold in front of us. The woman that is mentioned in this set of scriptures is the Nation of Israel, clothed with the glory of God. The child is Jesus Christ, who will rule with a rod of iron. Of course, the dragon is Lucifer himself. Upon the birth of Christ there was a massive attack from Lucifer to stop the plan of salvation. First Lucifer used Herod the King who tried to kill Jesus as a baby:

***“Then Herod, when he saw he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise” (Matthew 2:16).***

Of course, his plan did not work because God himself protected Jesus who is the head of the church from Lucifer. Next, we read that there was war in heaven. This is also mentioned by Jesus Himself:

***“And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of God suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force” (Matthew 11:12).***

Even though Jesus did not come right out and say there was war in heaven, surely the phrase “suffereth violence” would imply a tremendous struggle in heaven. Michael and the angels fought against the dragon and won! Jesus said,

***“I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven” (Luke 10:18)***

Lucifer was cast out of heaven completely and down to the earth, “neither was their place found any more in heaven” not allowed back into heaven anymore.

Because Lucifer was no longer allowed into heaven and because he knew that he had just a short time left he has great anger towards the church. We have been given a warning; he is coming down to make war with the church:

***“Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time” (Revelations 12:12b).***

The Apostle Peter told us:

***“Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: Whom resist stedfast in the faith,” (1 Peter 5:8-9a).***

We see this to be true because of the persecution Lucifer has waged against the New Testament church all down through the ages. Millions have been killed for the testimony of Jesus Christ and millions more shall die before Jesus comes back and puts an end to his evil. However, even as God helped and protected Jesus, he also will and has protected and secured the future of the church. By having faith in the blood of Jesus Christ we have the power to overcome the attacks of the devil against us. He is here upon the earth to destroy man by separating him from Christ Jesus. But his reign of destruction on the earth is almost over.

In the near future the deceiver of man, the accuser of the brethren, the persecutor of the church, will face his eternal damnation from God. We are told:

***“Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out” (John 12:31). “Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged” (John 16:11).***

Lucifer knows his fate is very soon and God’s judgment will come upon him. Let us read the account:

***“And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan and bound him a thousand years, And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of them is as the sand of the sea. And they***

*went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophets are, and shall be tormented day and night forever and ever” (Revelations 20:1-3, 7-10).*

This angel of light which was created by God but because of his rebellious pride he will be cast into hell forever. He was not created for that purpose and neither were you. However, because of the sin found in him, which caused his rebellion against God and the devastation he has brought upon mankind, he will be cast into hell for eternity. Lucifer seeks to deceive as many as possible to strike back at God. Lucifer has already been judged and there is no turning of this sentence; but man does not have to be his victim, rather just the opposite. We can be the victor over him. As long as a man or woman has life in their bodies, they have the opportunity to call upon God. If they will call and seek after God, they will find him. You don't have to meet the same fate as Lucifer, you can be saved, filled with the Holy Ghost, and spend eternity with God in His kingdom.

When Jesus began His ministry, He faced Lucifer, Satan, the devil. After He was baptized and filled with the Holy Ghost, the scriptures tell us:

*“Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred. And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. But He answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Then the devil taketh Him up into the holy city, and setteth Him on a pinnacle of the temple, And saith unto Him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give His angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. Again, the devil taketh*

*him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth Him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto Him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto Him” (Matthew 4:1-11).*

Jesus resisted the temptation of the devil. And by this example that he gave us, we know that through him we can also resist Lucifer and be overcomers.

*“For God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment.”(2 Peter 2:4)*

Torment Me Not!! This is the state of all devils and demons. Tormented; because they have been cast out of their original habitat, they have no rest. The only time they have rest is when they possess a person. When Lucifer became corrupt, he also corrupted one third of the angels of heaven. These angels were also cast down to the earth and are here on the earth now. One thing I want you to understand about demons and devils is that their fate is sealed. They are reserved in chains until the execution of their sentence.

*“And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day” (Jude 6).*

In the scripture above it said they were delivered into chains of darkness, which means, even though they may desire to return to God they are in bondage and cannot be set free. They are held in darkness and reserved unto judgment. Even though we may not see them they are here working their evil ways in the lives of unbelievers. And they also are battling against believers. They range from high ranking to low ranks. There are a few accounts mentioned in the Old Testament about demons and devils, and their involvements in the lives of people. One of the best known accounts in the Old Testament is that of King Saul.

After the children of Israel had come to the land God had promised them, God appointed judges over them to handle any legal matters that would arise. However, after several generations the people began to look at the nations around them and seeing how they had kings who ruled over them they became dissatisfied and began to murmur. So God granted them their desire and gave them a king. The first king he picked was a man by the name of Saul. God anointed him and lifted him up to be king over all of Israel. To begin with he was doing really well, but then he became impatient. Instead of waiting on God, he began to take things into his own hands. Then on top of that he became disobedient and rebellious to the commandments of God. When he was confronted with his disobedience he tried to justify himself and make excuses. Therefore, he was rejected by God from being King and the anointing of God lifted from him. The scriptures tell us:

***“But the Spirit of the Lord departed from Saul, and an evil spirit from the Lord troubled him” (1 Samuel 16:14).***

Once God’s presence left Saul, he began to be tormented by an evil spirit. This devil had God’s permission to torment him. Sin always opens the door to devils. This man Saul, who had such a power anointed from the start, began to turn to the very occult practices he himself had outlawed to seek answers from a witch when faced with his impending fate. In the end he took his own life, when he felt there was no other way of escape. What a tragic end for a man of God. This story illustrates just exactly what demons and devils desire to do to all of mankind; to destroy them. Saul committed suicide when he could find no one else to kill him. Another illustration of the nature of demon spirits is found in the book of 1st Kings:

***“And the LORD said, who shall persuade Ahab, that he may go up and fall at Ramothgilead? And one said on this manner, and another said on that manner. And there came forth a spirit, and stood before the LORD, and said, I will persuade him. And the LORD said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. And he said, Thou shalt persuade him, and prevail also: go forth, and do so. Now therefore, behold, the LORD***

***hath put a lying spirit in the mouth of all these thy prophets, and the LORD hath spoken evil concerning thee” (1 Kings 22:20-23).***

Ahab was one of “...the most wicked kings to ever rule Israel,” because of his wickedness, God, speaking through His prophet Elijah told him he would die, and the dogs would lick up his blood. This is exactly what happened. This evil spirit, with God’s permission, caused the false prophet to deceive Ahab and he died according to the word of God.

When Jesus came and began His ministry, He brought new light upon demons, exposing them in a greater measure. Showing how they are interwoven in the affairs of mankind. These unclean spirits will take control of a person’s mind and body, to the point that a person can become demon possessed, sick, and tormented. You must understand the ultimate goal of the devil and his demons is the destruction of all mankind. We are told:

***“The thief (Lucifer) cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy” (John 10:10a).***

Because Lucifer and one third of the angels lost everything, they hate mankind whom God loves so much. Therefore, they seek to destroy us. We have several accounts of Christ’s confrontations with demons. When He had come out of the wilderness returning back to Galilee it is recorded:

***“And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people. And His fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto Him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsy; and He healed them” (Matthew 4:23-24).***

Notice the connection between diseases, sickness, torments, and demon spirits. We see this further illustrated in Jesus’ encounter with a demon possessed man, the demons called themselves Legion:

***“And they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes. And when He was come out of the ship, immediately there met Him out of the tombs a man with an unclean***

*spirit, Who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains: Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him. And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones. But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him, And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that Thou torment me not. For He said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit. And He asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, my name is Legion: for we are many. And he besought Him much that he would not send them away out of the country. Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding. And all the devils besought Him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand;) and were choked in the sea” (Mark 5:1-13).*

As you can tell by the story, this man had so many demons that they themselves declared their name was “Legion, for we are many.” He was so controlled by the demons that he could not even live with other people. He had been driven out of society and lived in the tombs with dead rotten corpses. He was what was considered a raging lunatic. There had been times when others had tried to bind him, but to no avail. He was so controlled by the evil spirits he would simply break the chains or ropes. No man could tame him for he was like a wild beast. When Jesus came into contact with him the demons in him recognized Jesus, as the Son of the most-high God. Knowing that Christ had power over them, they cried out “torment us not.” Jesus released them to go into a herd of swine. This is also the power God’s people have over devils and demons.

God has given his people power over demons and devil. Often, we may experience great opposition from people, but we must realize this is nothing but the devil using them to come against us, Paul told us,



***“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places” (Ephesians 6:12).***

Our battle is not with people, but with evil spirits, however if we hold strong to Jesus we shall overcome and come out victorious.

**“And having spoiled principalities and powers, He made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them...”(Colossians 2:15)**

Principalities!! These devils are considered one of the highest-ranking demons in Satan’s Kingdom. They have such influence that they dominate whole cities, and nations. They have authority over many lesser ranking demons that do their bidding. These are the most powerful in Satan’s kingdom, and are often assigned over a region, city, or even a nation.

One of the best examples of their power is found in the Book of Daniel. Daniel had set his heart to learn what the future held for his people. For 21 days he fasted and then an angel came with the answer:

***“Then said he unto me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that thou didst set thine heart to understand, and to chasten thyself before God, thy words were heard, and I am come for thy words. But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me one and twenty days: but lo’ Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me;” (Daniel 10:12-13).***

Persia was the greatest superpower on earth at that time. It is very clear that they were dominated and influenced by evil principalities. This dominating principality over the kingdom of Persia did not want the message to get through to Daniel. If you’ll remember, I have already quoted these scriptures in the chapter on Archangels. When Daniel began to pray, God heard his prayer and God sent the answer, but the answer was resisted for 21 days.

The same holds true for all of God’s people, God always hears our prayers, but often the answer is resisted by demons. So just like Daniel, we must be persistent in prayer until the answer comes. Jesus illustrated this foundational truth in His teachings:

*“And He spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; And shall not God avenge His own elect, which cry day and night unto Him, though He bear long with them? I tell you that He will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall He find faith on the earth?” (Luke 18:1, 7-8).*

God does hear prayers, and He does answer them. When the devil fought against the angels of God, resisting God’s answer to Daniel, Michael the Archangel came, fought, and prevailed so that the answer was delivered to the servant of God. After the angel had given Daniel the message from God he then said:

*“Then said he, Knowest thou wherefore I come unto thee? and now I return to fight with the prince of Persia; and when I am gone forth, lo, the prince of Grecia shall come” (Daniel 10:20).*

The next great superpower to come was Greece. They also would have a principality assigned to them, to keep them in bondage of sin and idol worshipping, to keep them in ignorance. We are told in the scriptures:

**“Who are taken captive by him (Satan) at his will” (2 Timothy 2:26).**

Satan desires to dominate all of mankind. There are some cities and nations that are known for particular sins, such as prostitution, pornography, drug abuse, poverty, murder, perversion, and so on. For instance, San Francisco, California is known for a high percentage of homosexuals. Los Angeles, California is known for the pornography produced there. They say 90% of all pornography produced in the world comes from LA. The city of Amsterdam, Holland (or The Netherlands) has been known for its prostitution (although Tel Aviv, Israel is known as the brothel capital of the world), Africa for its poverty, America for its perversion. When you look at a city and can see that a high percentage of people are caught up in a particular sin, one can safely assess that there is a high ranking principality behind it all. When a principality has control over an area no matter what man may be offered; programs, counseling, or rehabs, they will be to no avail. No matter what the people do to combat a particular sin, men and women will continue to fall into it until that principality is pulled down by the power of God. In southern Arizona

where I live, there is a high percentage of drug abuse, poverty, and adultery. I have been warning others about these principalities for several years and will continue until I see their power broken off the people's lives. Those principalities that have such a stronghold in the lives of people, and they can only be dethroned by the corporate prayer of God's people; this is the reason why the devil fights against unity among churches. If the devil can keep God's people divided over minor issues, they will never be able to pull down the principalities over that area. However, if God's people will come together in unity, with a common cause, they can pull down every stronghold; when a nation or city declares a season of prayer and fasting, principalities will come down.

Many times these principalities will rise up others against God's people to try and to destroy them; we find one such story in the Old Testament. Jehoshaphat was a godly king. The scriptures tell us:

***“But sought to the Lord God of this father, and walked in his commandments,” (2 Chronicles 17:4a).***

There came a time in his reign when the Moabites and Ammonites came against Jehoshaphat in battle. They desired to take from Israel all that God had given them. No doubt they were influenced by principalities. When Jehoshaphat heard this, he proclaimed a fast:

***“And Jehoshaphat feared, and set himself to seek the LORD, and proclaimed a fast throughout all Judah. And Judah gathered themselves together, to ask help of the LORD: even out of all the cities of Judah they came to seek the LORD” (2 Chronicles 20:3-4).***

***“And all Judah stood before the LORD, with their little ones, their wives, and their children” (2 Chronicles 20:13).***

Listen to how God replies:

***“And he said, Hearken ye, all Judah, and ye inhabitants of Jerusalem, and thou king Jehoshaphat, Thus saith the LORD unto you, Be not afraid nor dismayed by reason of this great multitude; for the battle is not yours, but God's. Tomorrow go ye down against them: behold, they come up by the cliff of Ziz; and ye shall find them at the end of the brook, before the wilderness of Jeruel. Ye shall not need to fight in this battle: set yourselves, stand ye still, and see the salvation of***

*the LORD with you, O Judah and Jerusalem: fear not, nor be dismayed; tomorrow go out against them: for the LORD will be with you” (2 Chronicles 20:15-17).*

This is what they found when they went out:

*“And when Judah came toward the watch tower in the wilderness, they looked unto the multitude, and, behold, they were dead bodies fallen to the earth, and none escaped” (Chronicles 20:24).*

God fought the battles for them. They did not have to lift a finger in battle. If God’s people would get a hold of the power of prayer and fasting they could win whole cities for God by pulling down principalities. We also, as individuals, have God given power over principalities. We have been given the gift of power and authority. Jesus told His disciples:

*“Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you” (Luke 10:19).*

We know the serpent was Lucifer, therefore, serpents are high ranking demons where as scorpions are lower ranking. Either way Jesus has given to us power over them. Paul tells us:

*“ For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord” (Romans 8:38-39).*

As you can clearly see we have authority over principalities. You may live in an area where they are working their evil influences in the lives of people, yet their wickedness has not even touched you or your family:

*“Because thou hast made the Lord, which is my refuge, even the most High, thy habitation; There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling” (Psalms 91:9-10).*

**SECTION # 4**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON #19**  
**FALLEN ANGELS - EVIL POWERS**

*“Now the Spirit speaketh expressly,  
that in the latter times some shall  
depart from the faith, giving heed  
to seducing spirits, and doctrines  
of devils;” ( 1 Timothy 4:1)*

Weakness!! Your weakness. The devil knows your weakness and that is the very thing he will prey upon. Don't think you don't have one because we all do. The Apostle Paul himself said:

*“Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall” (1 Corinthians 10:12).*

The next rank, or class, of demons is called evil powers. These are unclean spirits are assigned to different individuals. If you are doing anything for God, Satan has already taken notice and has decided to try and stop you. After he studies you for a while and finds out your weaknesses and characteristic flaws, he then assigns a demon (or evil power) to you to try and destroy you. You can see this pattern of demonic behavior in Lucifer himself when he came and seduced Eve in the garden. Apparently, Eve must have been hungry for knowledge, which itself is not bad as long as it is what God has ordained you to have. You see, it was not God's will for Eve to know right from wrong. Lucifer, seeing this, used it to his advantage, twisting around the truth and deceiving her.

These evil powers have taken out many men and women. There are numerous victims of spiritual warfare. Men and women who at one time held up the banner of Christ allowed themselves to be offended and walked away from Jesus. These evil powers prey upon the natural desires that God has given to all of us. If they see someone who is proud, they will begin to come against their minds, speaking lies to them, causing them to become exalted with the sin of pride.

These demons prey upon fleshly desires, enticing and luring men and women, whispering lies, twisting the truth, and exaggerating minor points. They never give up, but constantly bombard minds with negative thoughts. If they see a person who has a problem with jealousy, they make little suggestions to make them suspicious about whomever is the object of their jealousy. They tempt the greedy with the possibility to take a little more, and lies to them saying “no one will notice”. We have seen many fall because of greed. Living in mansions yet begging for money, luring others to give under false pretenses. These evil powers are constantly exhorting and enticing men and women into sin thus destroying them and their ministries:

***“But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death” (James 1:14-15).***

King David was an example of one who was lured into sin. Even though he had many wives, when he saw a beautiful woman bathing, lust gripped his heart. Not much is said about the great spiritual struggle that occurred within David as his flesh warred against the spirit. In the end David yielded to the flesh and had the woman brought to him and had intercourse with her. Of course, sin always demands more, and one sin leads to another, first lust, then fornication, then murder. David is only one of many, too numerous to mention who fell to the lust of flesh. These evil powers are always around watching and waiting to try and destroy God’s people. As the coming of Christ’s return gets closer and closer, we will see more and more demonic activity in the lives of God’s people. We must always be on guard because the goal of all demons is to destroy man. Jesus, in His ministry, cast out many of these evil powers:

***“And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying, Lord, have mercy on my son: for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: for oftentimes he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water. And I brought him to Thy disciples, and they could not cure him. Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I suffer you? Bring him hither to me. And Jesus rebuked the devil; and***

*he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour. Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out? And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting” (Matthew 17:14-21).*

These evil powers may be called by many names: deaf and dumb spirits, spirits of infirmities, the list goes on and on. When these evil powers get a hold upon a man or woman, they can afflict their minds or bodies. Taking total control of them, causing them to hurt and offend—the ones they love the most, using them to wreak havoc and chaos in the lives of people; the end results is always the same if they don't get delivered, they will utterly be destroyed. The good news is that through Jesus Christ they can be set free. Jesus told us:

*“And these signs shall follow them that believe; In My name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; They shall take up (cast out) serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover” (Mark 16:17-18).*

In my own ministry I have encountered those who were demon possessed on several occasions. One such time was with a beautiful young woman. I received a call from a brother about 3 P.M. He asked me, “Could you please come and pray with my niece?” I replied “Yes, just let me cleanup a bit and I will be right over”. Well, about 15 minutes later he called again and said, “Don't worry about coming because the family is going to have her committed into a mental hospital”. I was concerned about this young lady and what was going to happen to her. Then, about an hour later he called again. “I talked the family out of having her committed, would you please hurry and come.” I jumped into my truck and took off, taking one other brother in the Lord. It took me about 30 minutes to drive the 22 miles where I would meet her uncle.

When I got there, we both got into his truck and took off. As we drove over to her house, the uncle told me the tragic story of how she had

gotten possessed with the demons. She had been involved with a group of young people who were involved in a demonic cult. Part of her initiation was that she had to have public sex with multiple partners. Afterwards, she began to be tormented by demon spirits. She just kept getting worse and worse. All types of strange things were happening with her; objects moving, strange noises, and voices coming out of her. In an attempt to get help for her the family had taken her to a group of preachers. They prayed but to no avail. When I got there and walked into the house, she fell on the floor writhing like a snake. A voice spoke out of her, "You cannot cast me out!" I grabbed the bottle of anointing oil I had brought with me, jumped onto the floor and commanded the demon to come out in the name of Jesus. Several came out of her crying and screaming with loud voices. After about 30 minutes the last one came out and she slumped as her body began to relax.

I lost all touch with her but several years later I was attending a service in Mesa, Arizona. After the service, while fellowshiping in the foyer with friends, a beautiful young woman walked up to me and said, "Do you remember me?" I had to be honest, "No, I don't." I replied. She said, "I was the one you cast the demons out of in Casa Grande." Then I remembered her. Here she was, in her right mind, and serving the Lord. She told me that since that night she had been set free. Now she was studying to be a nurse. Since then, I have seen her one other time. I had gone to the hospital to pray for a woman. There she was working as a nurse. God had brought a great deliverance in her life. She could have been destroyed by those demons but instead God set her free and now she was working making a living and serving God. God has given to His people the gift of power over evil powers.

***"Then there came out a spirit, and stood before the LORD, and said, I will entice him. And the LORD said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go out, and be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. And the Lord said, Thou shalt entice him, and thou shalt also prevail: go out, and do even so". (2 Chronicles 18:20-21)***

Murder! Drunkenness, Perversion.



These sins have captivated people from all walks of life, every race, nationality, and social standing. All through the history of mankind these sins have plagued men. Murder is a universal sin it occurs in all nations.

The next class of demons are “rulers of darkness” the very name implies how they can dominate a person. There have been times in the history of mankind when men have been so influenced by these “rulers of darkness” that they have tried to wipeout whole civilizations. Such was the case of the holocaust in World War II, when the Germans tried to exterminate the Jews. In America alone, there are over 50 people are murdered every day. Thousands of people disappear everyday never to be seen or heard from again. It is reported that half a million women are sold as sex slaves every year. When these spirits get a hold on a person, they will commit some of the most horrible crimes one could ever image. We have seen in history how when these spirits begin to influence a group of people, they will kill for any reason at all. All down through history, genocide has plagued the human race. The devil has used these rulers of darkness to destroy God’s beautiful creation, people. If you remember I told you that Lucifer was permanently removed from access into heaven in the days of John the Baptist:

***“Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time” (Revelations 12:12b).***

Just before Jesus was betrayed and crucified, He told His disciples that horrendous days lay ahead for God’s people:

***“And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and His disciples came to Him for to shew him the building of the temple. And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? Verily I say unto you, there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down” (Matthew 24:1-2).***

***“Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for My Name’s sake” (Matthew 24:9).***

After Jesus ascension into heaven, there was a great move of God. Thousands were converted to Christ. However, it was not long until Lucifer began to launch an attack against the followers of Christ just as Jesus had prophesied. According to the Bible, the very first one to die for his faith was Stephen. Stephen was brought before the ruling council of a synagogue and accused of blasphemy. After they had heard his defense, the scripture tells us:

***“When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth. But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, and said, Behold, I see heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God. Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord, and cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man’s feet, whose name was Saul (Saul became Paul when he was converted to Christianity). And they stoned Stephen calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep” (Acts 7:54-60).***

That is not the only case. There are many more. In 64 A.D. the Roman Emperor Caesar Nero who was insane and without any morality, no doubt influenced by rulers of darkness, launched an attack upon the Christians. He attempted to exterminate all people who professed faith in Jesus Christ. He did not just kill Christians but enjoyed watching them suffer, crucifying them, burning them alive, casting them into arenas where they would be ripped to pieces by wild animals. Nero is also accredited for the death of the apostle Peter and Paul, Peter whom he had crucified and Paul whom he had beheaded. Because Nero executed and encouraged persecution of the Christians many other empires began to kill them. As a result, 100rds of thousands, if not millions suffered the worst kind of tortures and death one could image. Down through the ages, Lucifer has persecuted God’s people, trying to exterminate them; but every time he has tried to crush out God’s people the result was that

Christianity has thrived. Lucifer cannot, and will not, overcome God's people:

***“And they overcame him (Satan) by the blood of the lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death” (Revelations 12:11).***

The sin of drunkenness has affected all people. There is not one nation that has not been touched by its power. Since America repealed prohibition, making drinking and drunkenness legal, millions have died from its evil effects. Every year it reaps a harvest of lost souls all across this nation on our highways, and many homes and families have been ripped apart by its devastating effects. Even though it is flaunted and encouraged in our society, many have even stopped preaching against it from the pulpit, twisting God's Word around to justify it. Yet we are told in God's Word:

***“Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God” (1 Corinthians 6:9-10).***

If you notice, there was a long list of evils beside drunkenness. These sinful things are influences by evil spirits. This nation and the world have seen the effects of when rulers of darkness grip the hearts of people; death, sickness and poverty are the results. America right now is in the grips of methamphetamine or crystal-meth addiction. Its effects along with the many other drugs Americans consume are ravaging this nation. The lifestyle of partying and riotousness is taking a tow on America's financial economy, bringing it to the brink of ruins.

Pornography is one of the things that rulers of darkness use to take captive many people. America is in an epidemic. Rich, poor, great, and small, men and women, boys and girls have been affected and are being influenced by this destructive evil. Our whole society has been affected. It is reported that every two minutes there is a woman raped in America. We see it in every aspect of our world. Our public television programs show it. Even the clothes that many wear are influenced by it. It is

available in convenience stores, it is displayed in grocery stores, and even huge retail stores sell it; billboards display it. Advertisers have used it to sell everything. The Internet is polluted with it. Everywhere you look you are assaulted with it. Parents and their children are exposed to it every day. The effects are devastating to our society, teen pregnancy, rape, child molestation, broken homes, etc. The shame about it is that it is flaunted and even encouraged by our society. As a nation we cannot open flaunt nudity and sexual perversion and expect to not reap what we sow. How long will God's people stand by and not take a stand? If we would fast and pray, these rulers of darkness could be pulled down. God told His people:

***“If My people, which are called by My name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek My face, and turn from their wicked ways, then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and heal their land” (2 Chronicles 7:14).***

God wants to heal our land but must begin with one person at a time. Many of God's people have lost their desire to pray and fast. These are almost nonexistent in the church today. However, if we are to have the power and authority to cast these rulers of darkness out, prayer and fasting must become a lifestyle.

Let us not fool ourselves. Nothing is going to stop the flood of wickedness except the power of God. If the lost are to be saved, God's people must begin to pray and fast. One of the greatest examples of how prayer and fasting will bring revival is found on the pages of our history books. During World War II, American fathers and mothers began to pray. The result of their prayer was the great healing revival. We should learn from history that if America is to not perish, we must once again get on our knees before the throne of God.

**“Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.”**  
**(John 8:44)**

Separated Ones!! This is who the Pharisees felt they were, separated unto God to protect His law. However, Jesus had some very strong words concerning these religious elite of His generation. Pharisees believed in the strict adherence to the laws of Moses. They considered themselves the preservers of the temple laws. The Pharisees had a good beginning. When Alexander the Great conquered Palestine about 300 years before Christ, many were concerned about the rapid spread of the Greek culture. Many of the Jewish brethren resisted this intrusion of paganism by banding themselves together, thus forming the Pharisees. They did this in effort to preserve the purity of God's law. However, through the years they had lost spirituality and had gained carnality. What began as the preservation of God's Word became twisted and perverted. They had become more religious than spiritual. They had gotten so far off track that Jesus called them hypocrites, serpents, and vipers. What happened? Religion! You see the devil does not care if you are religious, he does not care if you are spiritual. As long as you are doing things your way and not God's way, he does not care. He will sit back and encourage you to explore any religion that does not teach that Jesus Christ is the only way to salvation. Satan has used spirituality and religion to deceive people from the very beginning. As far as recorded history has been kept, mankind has been deceived into worshipping false gods. Abraham was called out of a nation of idol worshipers. The Egyptians had many gods. They believed these gods had a part in creation, offered protection, took care of people and their crops; every aspect of their lives was controlled by these false gods. As I pointed out earlier, often their gods would represent plants, animals, and objects they would come into contact with daily. When God took His people out of Egyptian bondage, it took no time at all for those being influenced by the demons of spiritual wickedness to fall into idol worshipping:

***“And when the people saw that Moses delayed to come down out of the mount, the people gathered themselves together unto Aaron, and said unto him, Up, make us gods, which shall go before us; for as for this Moses, the man that brought us up out of the land of Egypt, we know not what is become of him. And Aaron said unto them, Break off***

*the golden earrings, which are in the ears of your wives, of your sons, and of your daughters, and bring them unto me. And all the people brake off the golden earrings which were in their ears, and brought them unto Aaron. And he received them at their hand, and fashioned it with a graving tool, after he had made it a molten calf: and they said, These be thy gods, O Israel, which brought thee up out of the land of Egypt. And when Aaron saw it, he built an altar before it; and Aaron made proclamation, and said, tomorrow is a feast to the LORD. And they rose up early on the morrow, and offered burnt offerings, and brought peace offerings; and the people sat down to eat and to drink, and rose up to play. And the LORD said unto Moses, Go, get thee down; for thy people, which thou broughtest out of the land of Egypt, have corrupted themselves: They have turned aside quickly out of the way which I commanded them: they have made them a molten calf, and have worshipped it, and have sacrificed thereunto, and said, These be thy gods, O Israel, which have brought thee up out of the land of Egypt”(Exodus 32:1-8).*

Once God brought them into the promise land. He warned them not to allow themselves to be corrupted by the false gods of the nations around them. However, within a few generations they had fallen into idolatry. Every known civilization has been under the influence of spiritual wickedness; Babylonians, Persians, Greeks, Romans. Even today we have many, many religions. Everything from worshipping of dolls, angels, statues, to worshipping trees and self, it's seen everywhere. Jesus told us:

***“Take heed that no man deceive you, for many shall come in My name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many....And many false prophets shall rise and shall deceive many” (Matthew 24:4-5, 11).***

These demons of Spiritual wickedness will do everything they can to get you to believe in anything but the one and true God. If these spirits cannot get you to turn away from God, then he will try and twist the Word of God around, causing you to believe a lie and be damned. As the coming of Christ draws closer and closer, God has warned us that the demons of spiritual wickedness will deceive more and more people.

We see this true in our own generation. Even in the Christian faith, many denominations that began because of the result of a dynamic Holy Ghost revival through the years have lost the fire. Oh, God still blesses because He honors His Word. In many denominations the only anointing seen is upon the Word of God itself. So, they have turned to talented speaking, singing, programs, teachings, anything that appears spiritual, but all it is man trying his best to make things happen. The gifts of the Spirit are rarely seen, if at all. No more casting out of devils, instead call behavioral health institutes. No more laying hands on the sick, instead they run to the doctor or emergency rooms. Now don't get me wrong, I believe there are times when zealous preachers have abused people for self-exaltation, and I thank God for the medical health profession; but how much more would God love it if we put our trust and faith in Him first. Paul tells us to get away from such religious people:

***“This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof; from such turn away” (2 Timothy 3:1-5).***

The power this scripture speaks of is the power of God; the anointing that we spoke of earlier. Just because a person is a talented speaker, or has the ability to influence people, with a charismatic personality does not mean they are of God. Jesus warned us they would appear to be sheep but are inwardly wolves. Paul said they would come as angels of light. Jesus told us we would know a person by the fruit they bear. They compromise the truth for money, teaching that grace is applied to everything, and a person can live any way they want to because once we're saved, we're always saved; teaching lies such as homosexuality is not sin, it is a sickness or just the way someone is born. Paul warned us to stay away from it. Telling us perilous times would come for those who stand for truth, holiness, and righteousness. In these final days of the devil's reign on the face of the earth there will be even more and more

people fall under the influence of spiritual wickedness. False prophets and the antichrist will arise and deceive the whole world. However, they that know the truth will not be deceived. The scripture tells,

***“For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect” (Mark 13:22).***

Those who know the Spirit of God and his word will not be deceived. But will be kept by power of his word and Spirit.



**SECTION # 4**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 20**  
**FALLEN MAN - REDEEMED MAN**

*“And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever: Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken.” (Genesis 3:22-23)*

Where art thou!! God called to Adam. Never before had Adam hidden from God, but this time it was different. Adam knew he was naked. How did he know? Sin had entered the hearts of man and the result was death.

Out of everything that God created, man’s story is the most tragic of all. Man was God’s finest creation, His most prized possession. After God had created the heavens and earth and every living thing, God then created man. He scooped down and took the dust of the earth and created man in His likeness and image. When He was finished, he looked at man and said, “It is good.” He liked what he saw; He was pleased with man. We read in Genesis how man was created:

*“And God said, Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the earth, and to every*

*fowl of the air, and to everything that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so. And God saw everything that he had made, and, behold, it was very good” (Genesis 1:26-31a).*

*“And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul” (Genesis 2:7).*

How God made man is a mystery that we will never understand. How God took the dirt of the earth and created the bones; how He created the nervous system, and every vital organ, science will never understand. Once God had made this man there was something very special he gave them. Man at first was just a lifeless mass of flesh, no different than any other animal, until God breathed His breath into him. At that very moment, man opened his eyes. There he stood, a living, breathing, heart beating, thought processing creation, created in the image of God. God then took this man and gave him power and dominion over all the works of his hands.

When David began to think about all God had done for him, and given to man, he was amazed and cried out:

*“When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and thy stars, which thou hast ordained; What is man, that thou art mindful of him? And the son of man, that thou visitest? For Thou hast made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory and honour. Thou madest him to have dominion over the works of thy hands; Thou hast put all things under his feet” (Psalm 8:3-6).*

God gave His best to man. Out of everything God created, He crowned man with His glory. God loved and cherished him. Oh, how He enjoyed His fellowship with him. He would come down in the cool of the evening and walk with him. However, when mankind disobeyed the only command that God had given them, all that changed. Let us read the story of the fall of man:

*“Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden. And the LORD God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. And He said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman whom Thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the LORD God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. And the LORD God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise His heel. Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I*

*commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living. Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make coats of skins, and clothed them. And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of Us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life” (Genesis 3:1-24).*

When man ate of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, yes indeed they did obtain knowledge of good and evil, but they did not obtain the power to resist evil and to do good. Sin entered the world, with sin came what I call the three Sss, sickness, suffering, and shame. God had given man dominion over all the works of his hand, but when man sinned, he left the headship of God and became dominated by Satan. When man sinned, he turned everything over to Satan and Satan has dominated man ever since. Satan himself told Jesus all the kingdoms of the world had been given him and that he had power over them. The same rebellion Satan had, had entered the hearts of man, and manifested itself as sin. Sin is the disobedience to the laws of God. Therefore, every man born from that day has been dominated by a sinful nature; all but one, the Man Jesus Christ. When man sinned, he was driven out from God’s presence. God instructed them how to survive by tilling the soil. He instructed Adam:

*“And thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread“ (Genesis 3:17b, 18a).*

No longer was God going to make it so easy on them. Now, because of their disobedience, man was going to have to work for a living. This

truth still applies to us today. Because of sin, man was separated from the provisions and life God had provided them. We are told:

***“Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned” (Romans 5:12).***

When sin had entered the world, disease and sickness entered also. From the days of Adam’s transgression, to the present, all have faced death; and death has won.

Once Adam and Eve were driven out of the garden, they began to work the earth, surviving upon pure fortitude and instinct. Their first-born son they named Cain; their second born they named Abel. Cain was the first man ever to be born of a woman, and he because of the sin that had been released into the hearts of man, he killed his own brother Abel. The first man ever to be born of a woman became a murderer. Sin had entered the world and man would reap the results, death. Man was separated from God and they became more and more evil:

***“And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved Him at His heart” (Genesis 6:6-7).***

If you noticed God said, “every imagination of the heart was evil continually” The heart of man had changed from good to evil. Jesus said:

***“For out of the heart proceedeth evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies: (Matthew 15:19).***

***“The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked” (Jeremiah 17:9).***

***“Do ye indeed speak righteousness, O congregation? Do ye judge uprightly, O ye sons of men? Yea, in heart ye work wickedness; ye weigh the violence of your hands in the earth. The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies. Their poison is like the poison of a serpent: they are like the deaf adder that stoppeth her ear;” (Psalm 58:1-4).***

God had even come to the point He wanted to destroy man; but there was one who had favor with God, Noah. Because of one man, God spared the whole human race. Even today God is looking for a man or woman who will stand up for righteousness when not one else will. So that he can be reconciled to the man he loves. You must understand it broke God's heart to have to separate himself from man because he loved him so much. All down through the history of man, God has sought to be reconciled to man. And once again have the relationship with man He had in the beginning. First, He found Abraham with whom He entered into a covenant with. Making Abraham the father of the children of reconciliation.

God gave His people the law through Moses. He looked upon the heart of man and saw what caused the most pain. By the law, God set standards for His people to live by. You must understand why God gave His law. God had given the law for the physical and spiritual well-being of His people. Now that mankind was separated from Him, the law was a means for them to come back to God, but the law could not change the heart of man.

God told His people, if you will keep the law, it will be well with you and you will live a long life. So, by the law came the promise of prosperity and long life, the very thing man lost because of sin. The problem was, because of the sinful nature of man, they could not keep the law. Was the law bad? No, it was good, from God; it was spiritual, able to bring life:

***“See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil; In that I command thee this day to love the LORD thy God, to walk in His ways, and to keep His commandments and His statutes and His judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the LORD thy God shall bless thee in the land whither thou goest to possess it. But if thine heart turn away, so that thou wilt not hear, but shalt be drawn away, and worship other gods, and serve them; I denounce unto you this day, that ye shall surely perish, and that ye shall not prolong your days upon the land, whither thou passest over Jordan to go to possess it. I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before***

*you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: That thou mayest love the LORD thy God, and that thou mayest obey His voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto Him: for He is thy life, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the LORD sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them” (Deuteronomy 30:15-20).*

God had set before man life or death if they would keep the law. The blessings of God would come upon them. If they broke the law, they would be cursed. These promises still applicable today, if we will love God and obey His commandments we shall live in His presence; and if we love him, we will keep His commandments:

*“If ye love me, keep my commandments (John 14:15).*

His commandments will not be grievous unto us, but a delight. God’s standards have not changed. With such promises, why was it, God’s people could not get it together? Jesus Himself said, God has given to every man and woman freewill. He gives us the opportunity to choose to obey or disobey Him:

*“Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill’ (Matthew 5:17).*

If Jesus came to fulfill the law, what was lacking? What would give man the ability to keep the law God gave to them? Why is it the children of man cannot obtain the promises of God? God has given them the law and promised them prosperity and long life. He promised them a land flowing with milk and honey. What is it that keeps them from obtaining the promises of God? Sin!

*“Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man. Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to*

*another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God. For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death. But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter. What shall we say then? Is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet. But sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin was dead. For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died. And the commandment, which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death. For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me. Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good. Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful. For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin. For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good. Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin” (Romans 7:1-25).*



Sin separates us from God. It keeps us from obtaining the gifts of God. Understand the law is holy and good; it was our schoolmaster to set a standard which leads us to Christ. The reason it works death in us was because we cannot keep it, because we are sinners:

***“For all have sinned and come short of the glory of God;” (Romans 3:23).***

Keeping the law cannot save you because we don't have the ability to keep the law. The law was not able to reunite man to God: It was only to bring us to Christ.

***“Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God. Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin” (Romans 3:19-20).***

Even though man has the law, and they have the promises of God, their hearts are evil and full of unbelief:

***“For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God” (Galatians 3:10-11a).***

Can you continue in everything written in the Bible by your own ability? No! This is the condition of people without God. If we look back into the Old Testament, man without God is without hope, without life:

***“Therefore is judgment far from us, neither doth justice overtake us: we wait for light, but behold obscurity; for brightness, but we walk in darkness. We grope for the wall like the blind, and we grope as if we had no eyes: we stumble at noon day as in the night; we are in desolate places as dead men. We roar all like bears, and mourn sore like doves: we look for judgment, but there is none; for salvation, but it is far off from us. For our transgressions are multiplied before thee, and our sins testify against us: for our transgressions are with us; and as for our iniquities, we know them; In transgressing and lying against the LORD, and departing away from our God, speaking oppression and revolt, conceiving and uttering from the heart words of falsehood. And***

*judgment is turned away backward, and justice standeth afar off: for truth is fallen in the street, and equity cannot enter. Yea, truth faileth; and he that departeth from evil maketh himself a prey: and the LORD saw it, and it displeased him that there was no judgment.” (Isaiah 59:9-15).*

This is our condition without God now; we are lost. We cannot in any means save ourselves. Only God can save us because only God can change the heart. In spite of all the good things one may do they cannot earn salvation. Works cannot save us; the law cannot save us; both of these are necessary but there must be one more thing added, faith in Jesus Christ:

*“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God” (Ephesians 2:8).*

This is the one thing God ask of every man, woman and child that is to have faith. God has numerous gifts to give his people if they will have faith. And yet faith also is a gift from God These God has given to us, that make it possible to obtain salvation: grace and faith:

*“For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one Man, Jesus Christ, hath abound unto many” (Romans 5:15).*

Adam lost man’s relationship with God; God has given us the possibility to be reconciled to Him; all we have to do is accept His gift of salvation.

## **REDEEMED MAN**

*“Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you, and learn of Me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For My yoke is easy, and my burden is light. (Matthew 11:28-30)*

Created!! in Christ Jesus. In the beginning man was created in the image of God. Now He wants to conform you to the image of Christ.

Are you ready to take back what is rightfully yours? Are you ready to have the dominion God intended man to have? Well, you can have it in Christ!!

The only way you can have what is rightfully yours is you must go back and have the relationship Adam had with God before sin entered into the world, we must go back to the point of pain. I must go to the place of suffering, the place where Christ died on the cross. Even though this is the place of suffering for Christ, it is the point of life for us. It is the point, the place that takes us into the presence of God, who is love. The scriptures tell us:

***“Thou wilt shew me the path of life; in Thy presence is the fullness of joy; at Thy right hand there are pleasures for ever-more” (Psalm 16:11).***

God sent His Son into a world of sin and rebellion, to give man the opportunity to be saved, to be a part of His kingdom. When Jesus began His ministry, He preached “Repent for the kingdom of God is at hand” and indeed it was, for the King had come to redeem man, to reconcile man back to God. When Jesus was questioned about the mighty works He performed, He proclaimed He was just doing what He had seen the Father do. The Father was the Creator of life; therefore, it was natural for the Son to bring life also. When He was asked to show them the Father He replied:

***“He that hath seen Me, hath seen the Father;” (John 14:9).***

Jesus tried to make them understand, that by His presence on the earth the Kingdom of God had come to them. He said:

***“but if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you” (Matthew 12:28).***

Jesus had brought the Kingdom of God with Him. It was open wide for all to come into. He is the mediator between God and mankind:

***“For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus” (1 Timothy 2:5).***

Christ is the go between. Man was separated from God, but Jesus stepped in and, brought the two together. Jesus takes us from the kingdom of the world and places us in the Kingdom of his Father. Jesus is the only

One who can do this, He is the door. Jesus explained this to them. There is no other door, no other entry into God's kingdom.:

***“Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. All that ever came before Me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door: by Me if any man enters in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture” (John 10:7-9).***

Jesus came to heal the hearts and lives of man to show ordinary people who had common everyday problem and worries, how they could be reconciled with God Almighty, He told them he came to give them life, he came to change their whole world. He meets them at the point of their pain with His healing power, transforming their lives forever. God has always desired to fellowship with man therefore He has constantly tried to draw man to Him, but man has always resisted Him and turned to just the opposite. God summed up the reason why. It is because of the condition of man's heart. He revealed this when He spoke through the prophet's mouth:

***“The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: (Jeremiah 17:9).***

Therefore, God brought salvation. God became flesh, and was born of a virgin, lived a life just like every one of us. Through Jesus Christ the Kingdom of God was brought down to man:

***“From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say Repent: for the Kingdom Heaven is at hand.” (Matthew 4:17)***

God walked among man. Even though He was God, man could not receive Him, because they were not spiritually minded. Christ taught and spoke of spiritual things:

***“...the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life” (John 6:63b).***

They could not receive Him because they were blinded by their own preconceived notions and ideas of how the Savior of the world would come and how they must enter in the Kingdom of God. They thought that they could earn their way in by their own good works. They were blinded to the truth because their hearts were far from God so they could not accept

Him; Their heart were hardened to the truth. However, those who were humble and meek, accepted Jesus for Who He was. The scriptures say:

***“But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on His name” (John 1:12).***

What this meant was you had to accept and believe he at face value, in other words even though he looked like just another man, you had to believe the words he said was true. And to them who did He gave them the ability to be born again. When sinful flesh was weak, God, by His Spirit, gave man the power to be born into His Kingdom. Jesus is the door into the kingdom of God. There is no other way but through Him. The condition of entering in the Kingdom of God has never changed. Jesus said we must believe on the only begotten Son of God. He presented Himself to the people by the words He spoke, confirming them with signs following. Even we today can only become a part of God’s Kingdom, through believing in Jesus Christ and his word. Only then can we make entry into His Spiritual Kingdom:

***“Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son; In whom we have redemption through His blood, even the forgiveness of sins” (Colossians 1: 12-14).***

Jesus explained that entering in the Kingdom of God is like the birthing process. We leave a dark isolated place and enter in a place of light and life. Once a person has entered in the kingdom of God, through the door that is Jesus Christ, and has entered in the glorious life of abiding in the Kingdom of God there will be a noticeable change in their personality, attitude, and outlook on life. They will have a new prospective on life. The old ways of doing things, the old way of thinking has changed. The old way of living that brought death and destruction has changed and now a new life has sprung up within. Paul the apostle explained it like this:

***“Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new” (2 Corinthians 5:17).***

***“Even so we also should walk in newness of life” (Romans 6:4).***

This newness of life we have received from Christ upon conversion will begin to transform us into the image of Christ. The old man (old nature) has been crucified with Christ. No longer are we held in bondage to the old sinful nature. Redeemed man obtains the power God gave to man to begin with. Jesus said:

***“Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you” (Luke 10:19).***

Now, as I have pointed out before, this power is manifested in the spirit realm and once you conquer Satan and his demons in the spirit....

***“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood,” (Ephesians 6:12a)....***

Then this authority begins to manifest itself in the natural realm and we begin to see God’s goodness and blessings manifest in our natural life. But how do we get this authority and power back?

Everything has a starting place, a point of origin. Man is no exception. Human life begins when a seed is conceived in the womb. What begins with a seed that cannot even be seen with the natural eye grows into a marvelous, beautiful, wonderful, masterpiece of art. God spared nothing when he gave his finest creation the ability to conceive life. As a baby in the womb, everything is provided for us. We are surrounded with the security of a loving mother and all our needs are met. I think one of the most beautiful pictures of peace, love, and serenity is a picture of a fetus sucking its thumb.

What a wonderful delight babies are to their parents; precious, bubbly, bouncing, full of energy, without a care in the world, fully trusting in their parents to provide for them.

Where does God come into all of this? The moment of conception, and a child begins to grow in the womb, God places a part of Himself in that little baby, a spirit. This is the spirit of man that God has given to all of us. This spirit is our inward man. It is what gives us a consciousness of God. It is what brings life to the flesh. The union of the flesh and spirit gives us our soul, which gives us our emotions, the ability to know right

from wrong, the ability to have faith and hope, and the ability to love. This is what separates us from the animals. They don't have the ability to know right from wrong; they don't have faith or hope.

Because of the fall of Adam not only are we born with God's nature we are also born with a sinful nature. This sinful nature we are born with has a way of draining the joy and happiness from us. I remember as a child being asked "what do you want to be when you grow up?" I believe I said a carpenter. When children are 6-7 years old, they don't say "Well, when I grow up, I want to be a drug addict, I want to be a murderer, I want to be a thief, I want to be homosexual, I want to be a liar, I want to be a prostitute; no, their hearts are pure, but the sinful nature we have is always pulling us in the way of destruction. The Bible says:

***"There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death" (Proverbs 14:12).***

We live in a cold and cruel environment because of sin. Man was never created to live in that environment. Man was created to dwell in love, having their hearts full of joy and peace. We were never created to resist sin or evil. But because we are exposed to sin it has a way of hardening a person's heart, and because of sin the very life is drained out of us leaving us lifeless, bitter, cold, and miserable. Often the only way we know how to cope with the world is to treat others with anger and hatred, allowing the sinful nature to work through us hurting and wounding others.

In this world we are subjected to many hurts and sorrows. It is a struggle to survive in a cruel world with all that is inflicted upon our hearts and souls. Many times, in life we are physically, mentally, or emotionally abused, rejected, and hurt. Therefore, there are many that feel like they just don't measure up or are not good enough; they are unfulfilled with no purpose in life. Some even come to the conclusion that life is not worth living and take their own lives. What a tragic end to one who began as a joyful, bubbly, beautiful baby.

However, there is hope in God. As one grows physically and mentally this spirit from God gives us awareness that there is more to life than what meets the eye; that there is a higher power; that there is life

outside of this life; that there is more to life than sorrows and hurts. Something deep inside of us longs for security and love; we want to be accepted for who we are. How does God take us from the state we are born into and translate us into His marvelous Kingdom? How does He redeem us from our sinful nature?

He does this by using three things, His Word, His Spirit, and His Son. These work hand in hand. First, to be saved one must have knowledge. God supplies this to us by His Word. You see, the Bible tells us:

***“...it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe” (1st Corinthians 1:21b).***

The only way one can be redeemed back to God is to first hear the Word of God. This is explained in Paul’s letter to the Romans:

***“How then shall they call on Him in Whom they have not believed? and How shall they believe in Him of Whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?” (Romans 10:14).***

God has chosen the preaching of His Word as the vehicle of salvation. Oh, what a precious gift His Word is!! The Spirit of the Word knows who we are and what we hold dear to our hearts, it knows all of the sorrows and hurts we have experienced in life. The scriptures say:

***“For the Word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart” (Hebrews 4:12).***

Once a person hears the Word of God then God prepares the heart by His Spirit to receive the Word, God does this by breaking the hardness of the heart caused by sin. When God’s Word is flowing under the anointing of the Spirit of God, it is like a hammer that breaks a rock, crushing all our resistance and causing our will to crumble, the scripture says,

***“Is not my Word like as a fire? Saith the Lord; and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces” (Jeremiah 23:29).***

This breaking softens our hearts causing all our hurts, sorrows, and griefs to surface thus allowing the Word to be planted in our hearts. The



Spirit of God then takes the word and gives us knowledge of sin, causing conviction to grip the heart. But that is not the only thing the word and Spirit of God does, it also produces faith. The scriptures tell us:

***“So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God” (Romans 10:17).***

If a person will receive God’s Word with simplicity and with an open heart believing that God’s word is truth, they shall be saved. This is what Jesus meant when he said:

***“Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child shall in no wise enter therein” (Luke 18:17).***

This leads us to the third step. Once we have received knowledge of sin, being convicted of sin. Have faith birth in their hearts, The Spirit of God then will draw you to Jesus Christ,

***“No man can come unto me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him” (John 6:44).***

The only way we can be born again is to come to Christ, calling upon his precious name. Jesus Himself said:

***“Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me” (Revelation 3:20).***

If a person will yield to the convicting power of God’s word and the drawing of the Spirit, coming to Jesus the door asking for forgiveness they will be born again. The scripture tells us,

***“Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the Word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever” (1Peter 1:23).***

Once you have accepted Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior, this precious seed of God will take root and begin to grow producing His Kingdom in your life. Faith then comes alive casting aside all doubts and fears.

***“Where unto shall we liken the kingdom of God? Or with what comparison shall we compare it? It is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth: But when it is sown, it growth up, and becometh greater than***

***all herbs, and shooteth out great branches; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it” (Mark 4:30-32).***

If we will continue to allow the Spirit of God to give us revelation of God’s Word, it will begin to feed the spirit, supplying the needs of the soul and nourishing your heart. This happens because the Word flows into the very soul of man. This Word and the Spirit of God then carries us from faith to faith, from glory to glory, as we grow and feed upon God’s Word. God wants to enter your hearts and abide there, filling you with his goodness and righteousness.

Now we can serve Him in humility and meekness. We are now able to worship Him in spirit and in truth. All guilt and condemnation has been removed and our hearts are now filled with joy and peace. Before we could not live a life pleasing to Him, but now in Christ we have the ability to please him. He picked us up from a life of despair and hopelessness and has placed us on the pathway of righteousness. This pathway leads to the many gifts, blessings and provisions God has for us in His Kingdom. Only those who have been born again can walk in that way. We are told:

***“And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it shall be for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein. No lion shall be there, nor any ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found there; but the redeemed shall walk there” (Isaiah 35:8-9).***

We are the redeemed of the Lord! God has paths of righteousness for us to walk, green pastures to feed in, still waters to draw from. This was all made possible because Christ shed his precious blood.

***“Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot” (1 Peter 1:18-19).***

I remember the day I met Christ and His transforming power of salvation. August of 1994. I had been bound by drugs, uncleanness, and perversion; I was bound by sin. I was full of pain and rejection, a miserable mess. I was unhappy even though I had a loving wife and family. I was

missing the key ingredient for happiness, God's love. God met me at the point of pain in my life. Since that day I have walked in the wonderful revelation of Who Jesus is, and how much He loves me. I have found the missing ingredient and it has filled my life and heart with joy. You too can live a life of abundance. Come to the cross and find liberty. We should never deviate from this life in Christ, never look to the left or right, or turn aside from this path and never look back. The scriptures tell us:

***“Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man draw back, my soul (Christ) shall have no pleasure in him. But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition (destruction); but of them that believe to the saving of the soul” (Hebrews 10:38-39).***

There will be times as you walk the way of holiness and righteousness that it will be hard on you. Jesus said:

***“Enter ye in at the straight gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat; Because straight is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it” (Matthew 7:13-14).***

The scriptures have made clear unto us there are two ways (paths). One leads to life and the other leads to death. The way of the world, which seems right according to the reasoning of man; the other way (path), God's way, leads to everlasting life. There are many things that will try and pull us away from God; but we have a perfect example of one who has lived in this sinful world but did not sin. He overcame the world, Jesus Christ, the Son of God. If we will keep our eyes on Him, he will not fail us. He will lead us, guide us, and keep us. The Psalmist summed it up in terms we can understand:

***“The Lord is my shepherd; I shall not want. He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: He leadeth me beside the still waters. He restoreth my soul: He leadeth me in paths of righteousness for His name sake” (Psalm 23:1-3).***

We are to look to Him in all things:

***“If ye then be risen with Christ (born again), seek those things which are above (God's Kingdom), where Christ sitteth on the right***

*hand of God. Set your affections on things above (God's Kingdom), not on things on the earth" (Colossians 3:1-2).*

*"Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith" (Hebrews 12:2).*

There is only one way that leads to eternal life; His name is Jesus Christ. He said:

*"I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me" (John 14:6).*

Without Jesus you can do nothing. There is a song I like that says (I can't even walk without you [Jesus] holding my hand). This is so true. Only because of Jesus do we have the ability to stand strong and to walk upright before God. He is our intercessor, constantly praying for us:

*"Wherefore He is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by Him, seeing He ever liveth to make intercession for them" (Hebrews 7:25).*

You can trust Him and depend upon Him, in all things. Only by looking to Him in all things can we have the strength to finish this course, to stay in His way, until the end. He will be with us in all things. The scriptures say:

*"I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee. So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me" (Hebrews 13:5b, 6).*

Jesus is the Door. Jesus is the Way. Jesus is the Word. Jesus is the Truth. Jesus is God made flesh. Jesus is the beginning and the end. Jesus is King of Kings, and Lord of Lords. When He comes in He warms the coldest of hearts. He does this by flooding their hearts with His precious love.

When we began to dwell in the presence of God, His presence fills our lives with joy. Only through Jesus can we find the fullness of God's presence, only then can we know God's precious love. He is the missing ingredient. What do we need to fill our hearts? What makes life worth living? "Love" I shout it out "love", but not just any love, God's love; unconditional love, love that is given without terms, without

condemnation. This kind of love is what fills our hearts and lives with peace and joy, the kind that is beyond human understanding.

Is this not what we all desire, a place of perfect love? One of the things that all people desire is to have a balanced, stable life. We want life to be easy, without conflict, strife, or complications. Yes, we may desire excitement and adventure, and life would become dull and boring without new challenges along the way, but we like to pick our challenges and not have them thrust upon us unexpectedly. Even though some may pick to have jobs of high stress, still they like to have a place where they can kick back, take their shoes off, and relax. We long to live lives of security, serenity, and peace. Nobody likes to be mistreated, hurt, or abused. If a person is constantly under the pressures of abuse, neglect, rejection, strife, or turmoil day in and day out they will develop nervous conditions or even mental sickness as well as poor health.

We desire love and this love is available to us today through Jesus Christ. The love that comforts us and gives us strength, that renews, restores, and revitalizes us. When we abide in His presence, waiting and trusting in faith upon God, the prophet Isaiah tells us:

***“He giveth power to the faint; and to them that have no might he increaseth strength. Even the youths shall faint and be weary, and the young men shall utterly fall: But they that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint” (Isaiah 40:29-31).***

God’s love may seem to be hard to find, but it is not. God is love, and when you come to God through Christ you receive the gift of grace and favor.

Once you give your heart to Jesus and become fully consecrated to Him, allowing Him to fill you with the Holy Ghost, the power of God will then begin to flow out of you and His mighty presence will be a blessing to others. Jesus desires to give to you the many gifts of God’s Kingdom, to fill your life with His many blessings, so you can be a witness to others of His marvelous gift that He desires to give to all of mankind.

**SECTION # 4**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 21**  
**REWARDS AND POSITIONS ON EARTH**

*“Wherefore He saith, when He ascended up on high, He led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.” (Ephesians 4:8)*

Grace!! According to the measure of the gift of Christ. When you look at the statement above it gives you a clear understanding of the amount of grace God has given us. Jesus gave His best, His all for us at Calvary. God has given to us His best, His all. He has held nothing back. The full measure of grace has been given to every member of God’s kingdom. The wonderful gift of God’s grace has been given to us equally. God does not segregate us and give one more than another. His grace, gift of love and gift of mercy, is given freely to all His people. He does not love one more than another. God does not show favoritism but offers to every born-again believer the same riches:

*“Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with Whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning” (James 1:17).*

The gifts and riches of God’s Kingdom are available to all. The door is wide open to all. You must realize that God has a kingdom full of riches waiting to be given to you. Yes, you! It is God’s will for us to obtain everything that He has made available for us now, in this life. Some think, “Well when I get to heaven, I will get my heavenly reward”, and yes, that is true, but God wants to reward you now! In this life!! Salvation is just the beginning of what God has for you. Jesus said, “I am the Door”. I think it is about time to step through that Door and start obtaining what God has for us. He does this so all can have the potential to fulfill their own destiny; to accomplish His will for their lives. Once a person is born again, they are placed in Christ Jesus; we are in His hands. Paul said:

*“Our life is hid with Christ in God” (Colossians 3:3b).*

We are a part of His kingdom now and God through his Son has provided for you all his rich's and blessings. God's blessings may come to you in the Spirit, but they are manifested in the fleshly realm. This is what the Apostle John spoke:

***“Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth” (3 John 2).***

You are his child, and you are in his hands. We find a good example of how God is holding us in his hand in the book of Jeremiah:

***“The word which came to Jeremiah from the Lord, saying, Arise, and go down to the potter's house, and there I will cause thee to hear My Word. Then I went down to the potter's house, and, behold, He wrought a work on the wheel. And the vessel that He made of clay was marred in the hand of the potter: so he made it again another vessel, as seemed good to the potter to make it. Then the Word of the Lord came to me, saying, O house of Israel, cannot I do with you as this potter? saith the Lord. Behold, as the clay is in the potter's hand, so are ye in Mine hand, O house of Israel” (Jeremiah 18:1-6).***

And even though these scriptures are written to Israel, the principles can be applied to us. He is molding us into the vessels He desires us to be. The scriptures tell us:

***“For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them” (Ephesians 2:10).***

However, for Him to be able to complete His workmanship we must humble ourselves completely to Him; and when you humble yourselves to Him then He makes available everything you need to be successful. Take advantage of what God has made available to you, through His Son Jesus Christ. Only then can you do great things for God. The scriptures say:

***“He that spared not His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall he not with Him also freely give us all things?” (Romans 8:33).***

As a child of God, He has made available to you the resources of His Kingdom, through these you can and will be successful in the ministry He has anointed you for. Now we are told:

***“for He maketh His sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust” (Matthew 5:45).***

God in His mercies blessed the earth and the inhabitants. He has given to man the ability to be successful with hard work. That is why many who don't know God are still successful. Now, just because a person knows God does not give them a license to be lazy. But with diligence and confidence in God, a person can accomplish much in God's Kingdom.

God was a Spirit, but He manifested Himself in the physical world. Man is physical but he manifests himself in the spirit. Only by having a clear vision from God concerning his call for your life, can you begin to pray according to His will and begin to see His spiritual blessings manifested in the physical and natural areas of our lives.

Jesus came and died on a cross so that you could have access to what God has provided for you. We are blessed spiritually, physically, mentally, and financially.

First let us look at the Spiritual Blessings, God has given us:

***“Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Who has blessed with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: According as He has choiced us in Him, before the foundations of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him in love: Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will” (Ephesians 1:3-5).***

You have to understand that God has provided for us all spiritual blessings, not some, but all spiritual blessings in heavenly places. We have obtained salvation, reconciliation, faith, virtue, knowledge, charity, grace, temperance, patience, joy, peace, gentleness, goodness, meekness, mercy, loving-kindness, freedom, sanctification, justification, godliness, holiness, and righteousness. Not our own righteousness, but the righteousness of God. Not righteousness by works, but righteousness by faith. We have obtained holiness; the scriptures tell us Jesus had the Spirit



of holiness. We also, as joint heirs, have received the Spirit of holiness. God has given to us His ability; all His attributes and characteristics.

***“And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness” (Ephesians 4:24).***

Seek after what God has for you. Above all the things of this life, seek after the spiritual blessings God has for you. Seek after the provisions God has provided for you, through His son Jesus Christ. Seek the kingdom of God, and all the things we need shall be provided for us. We should seek after the provisions He has for us in all areas of our lives; Spiritual blessings being the priority which then opens the door to obtain other blessings; mental, physical, and financial blessings. The world’s main interest is to obtain the things that bring pleasure to the flesh. They exert all their strength, energy, and abilities to obtain them. Christ said as His people we should not be like unto them. God’s people should exert their strength, energy, and abilities in obtaining more of God. Seek after what which brings spiritual life. Make God your priority in life. We are commanded to love God. When Jesus was asked what the greatest commandment was, He replied,

***“Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind” (Matthew 22:37).***

Loving God unlocks the riches of God’s kingdom in your life. You may come from a poor family, you may even be the least in your family like David was, but he was blessed of God and became the great King of Israel.

God wants to be first in your life. God wants you to seek Him. He does not want you to run after the things of the world. You will find that if you put God first and seek Him with your whole heart, you will find Him. Then the blessings of God will overtake you

Secondly, we have Physical Blessings. The Bible clearly tells us that if we will serve God, we will be blessed with health:

***“And said, If thou wilt diligently hearken to the voice of the LORD thy God, and wilt do that which is right in His sight, and wilt give ear to His commandments, and keep all His statutes, I will put none of these***

***diseases upon thee, which I have brought upon the Egyptians: for I am the LORD that healeth thee” (Exodus 15:26 ).***

He is the God that heals, but even better He will not let any diseases come upon us. David told us:

***“There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling” (Psalm 91:10).***

This is one of the precious gifts He has given to His people, health. That does not mean we will never have the devil attack our bodies, but when he does, Jesus will heal you. One of the last promises God gave His people in the Old Testament was:

***“But unto you that fear My name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in His wings” (Malachi 4:2).***

God has promised us health for our bodies; He will take care of His people.

Many people do not realize that because of the relationship they have with God, they are heirs to the blessings of God. They don't know how much God loves them, how much God longs to give them His blessings, because of the favor they have with Him. This is one of the things that Jesus brought to clarity; God is our Father, and as our Father He is concerned with every area of our lives. You are His precious child, and He loves you. God does not want us to get caught up in the web of the cares of this world, because he knows they are temporal. Understand that He is concerned with every area of our lives. You may not be educated or even have much talent but if you will begin to love God and follow Him with your whole heart God will bless you:

***“The Lord maketh poor, and maketh rich: he bringeth low, and lifteth up. He raiseth up the poor out of the dust, and lifteth up the beggar from the dunghill, to set them among princes, and to make them inherit the throne of glory: for the pillars of the earth are the Lord's, and He hath set the world upon them”(1 Samuel 2: 7-8).***

Next we have been Blessed Mentally:

***“For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind” (2 Timothy 1:7).***

As you study the Bible you will find that there is much on how God has blessed His people mentally. He has blessed us with much wisdom and knowledge.

Man may have a certain degree of wisdom when it comes to matters of the flesh, but when it comes to matters of the soul and heart that is when we need wisdom from above. God Himself has told us:

***“Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men” (1 Corinthians 1:25).***

***“For My thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My ways, saith the LORD. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are My ways higher than your ways, and My thoughts than your thoughts” (Isaiah 55:8-9).***

God’s wisdom is so far above man’s, even to the point that man’s wisdom appears foolish to Him. Men may seem wise in their own eyes, but true wisdom comes only from God. Only true mental health comes from God.

To obtain knowledge and wisdom, we must desire them, and then they will be given to us:

***“If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him” (James 1:5).***

Solomon desired wisdom when he began his reign as King of Israel. God asked him:

***“Ask what I shall give thee.” Solomon answering said. “Give therefore thy servant an understanding heart to judge Thy people, that I may discern between good and bad” (1 Kings 3:5,9).***

God answered Solomon’s prayer and gave him great wisdom. Jesus told us that by the Holy Spirit He would teach us all things:

***“Howbeit when He the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth, for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak” (John 16:13).***

Also, the Spirit through John the Beloved tells us:

***“But the anointing which ye have received of Him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing***

***teaches you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in Him.” (1 John 2:27)***

God by the Spirit will teach you the mysteries of the Kingdom of God, giving you wisdom so you need to be successful in ministry. Through God we can have a sound, sober, stable mind, not being tossed to and fro, not wavering but with fortitude and determination serving the Lord.

Finally, but not least, we have been Blessed Financially:

***“But thou shalt remember the LORD thy God: for it is He that giveth thee power to get wealth, that He may establish His covenant which He sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day” (Deuteronomy 8:18).***

God gives us the ability to obtain wealth. There has been so much teaching on the subject of financial blessings. However, being a Christian is not a get rich quick method. One time the Lord spoke to me and told me that there are some who are only in the ministry for the money. He does not promise to make you rich, but if we put God first in our lives, God will move His hand on our behalf. Jesus told us that where our treasures are, that is where our heart is going to be. Those things we hold dear to our hearts are what are going to hold us in captivity. We should not hold on to the things of this world tightly but be willing to let go of them at a moment’s notice. Because, in a moment they could all be gone. It is God’s will to bless you but let us not abuse the promise. Paul tells us:

***“Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content. I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: everywhere and in all things I am instructed both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need. I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me..... But my God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus” (Philippians 4:11-13, 19).***

We need to realize God knows our needs, and he will take care of us. That does not mean we will be rich but provided for. Jesus told us not to be overtaken with covetousness:

***“No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.***

*Ye cannot serve God and mammon (money). Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment?” (Matthew 6:24-25).*

*“Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you” (Matthew 6:31-33).*

Our main concern should be to seek after God. We are to put our treasures where they count, in heaven. Put your trust in that which shall abide forever, put it in God:

*“Lay not up for your selves treasures upon earth’ where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also” (Matthew 6:19-21).*

Lay treasures up in heaven. We are to tie up all loose ends of our lives. God does not want us to get caught up with the cares of the world, tied down with worries and stress, to the point we become unfruitful spiritually. Jesus warned us that the cares of this world could choke us and cause us to not bear fruit. When we become stressed out and worried or full of anxiety, unhappiness sets in, we begin to lose our joy, which leads to depression and bitterness. Then we are offended easily, which leads to unforgiveness. We are to stay full of the joy of God, letting our light burn bright. Let God reign in your heart so His peace may dwell in you abundantly. Trust God, He will make a way for you, He will direct your steps. If we will do this, we will be rewarded:

*“But without faith it is impossible to please Him: for He that cometh to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him” (Hebrews 11:6).*

God has blessed His people with so much. I cannot even begin to mention everything. And yet greed has grasped the hearts of many. Money

hungry, money grabbing lazy preacher have brought much reproach upon the body the Christ. Many have promised great riches and blessings from God, fleecing the flock while taking advantage of widower and those who are of a humble mind. Understand I am not against pastor or preachers who work hard in ministry and yes God will bless his people, but it is not Gods will for pastor or preachers to take advantage of Gods people. Preachers who live in mansions while bleeding some poor person of their money so they can live in luxury, and they do it all in the name of the Lord. God will bless his people but only so they can use those blessings to win soul for him.

Next, we will look at different positions in the body of Christ. When Jesus ascended back up into heaven, He gave to man the same anointing He had. The scriptures say:

***“But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ. Wherefore He saith, when He ascended up on high, He led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. (Now that He ascended, what is it but that He also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that He might fill all things.) And He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ: That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into Him in all things, which is the head, even Christ: From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love” (Ephesians 4:7-16).***

Some may say, “Well, I don’t have the ability to work for God”. God looks and sees your abilities before He ever calls you to a position.

What you lack He will give to you. If only God's people would learn the measure of grace and gifts Christ gave to them at Calvary. Then they could clearly understand the measure of the gifts God has for them and how to obtain them. If only they could fully understand that it is God's will to give to them His ability so that every joint could supply their measure to the body.

When Jesus was here on the earth, He established the foundation of God's government for the church, declaring that He was the chief corner stone. Paul the apostle elaborated even more on Christ as the foundation:

***“For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ” (1 Corinthians 3:11).***

Christ laid the foundation instructing the Apostles in the doctrine of the Church. Then after He ascended back into heaven, He sent the Holy Ghost to continue to teach them. The sad truth is, however, that many never accept their calling. That is why Jesus said:

***“For many are called, but few are chosen” (Matthew 22:14).***

We all have been called and appointed to a position in the body of Christ, ***“For the body is not one member, but many.***

We are His witnesses in the world today. We now share in His ministry. All have been called to be a fellow laborer with Christ. When a person is born again, a call or ministry is placed upon their lives. We become His instruments of righteousness that He will use to change the lives of men and women.

The Apostle Paul, in his teaching does not bring out every position in the body, but he points out those in leadership.

***And He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;***

He uses them as examples for all. He points out very clearly here that God gave leadership to the body. Jesus said that leadership or the greatest among us would be servants of all.

Who are the servants in the church? These servants are “apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers”. Someone says ‘I want to be a pastor, well then get ready to serve! Leaders must have a loving, humble spirit. Leaders must not take offence in anything but have a forgiving

spirit. They must not be in ministry for vain glory or self-exaltation. Not full of pride or desirous of filthy lucre. They must walk in humility being an example and instructing others in the way of righteousness. Being strong in faith and with great self-control

They are to take the body to maturity, so that the body would not be tossed to and fro, but to be rooted and ground in love. Paul brings it back down to everyone by saying “every joint and every part are all called into the ministry of the increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love”. None is exempt from this ministry, and only when all are operating in the ability God has given them can the body grow. We need to realize that every member is very important and is needed so the body can accomplish the mission of taking the gospel into all the world. The reason so many of God’s people are living below their potential in Christ is that they feel they are not important. The devil has condemned and criticized them so much that they lack confidence. They lack knowledge of their potential and the privileges they have been given:

***“Therefore My people are gone into captivity, because they have no knowledge” (Isaiah 5:13A).***

God has given everyone the opportunity and ability to achieve greatness in their appointed position or calling that He has placed upon their lives.

Someone may ask the question, what has God call me to do? What is my position in the Body? My question to you is what do you desire to do for God? You see God gives you the desire to do what he has called you to do! If you desire to preach, then preach. If you desire to teach, then teach. If you desire to sing, then sing. God will give you zeal to accomplish his will for his life.

Now because some callings are more displayed than others, those that are in the background feel that their callings are not as important. However, every member must do their part for the body to be a whole:

***“For the body is not one member, but many. If the foot shall say, because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? And if the ear shall say, because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? If the whole body were an eye,***



*where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling? But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased Him. And if they were all one member, where were the body? But now are they many members, yet but one body. And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you. Nay, much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary: And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness. For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked. That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another. And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it. Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular” (1 Corinthians 12:14-27).*

So, you can see here every member is very important. We are vessels of God. We were all born again by the same Spirit and the same Spirit of God dwells in us all. It’s all about what God has done for us least any man should boast. One might say I don’t know what I am able to do for God. Be willing to do what you are able to do. Understand, God, equips them whom He calls and whom he calls he justifies and then glorifies and anoints. He prepares us all by filling us with His Holy Spirit. And to every member of the body, he has given the same equipment his Holy Spirit.

This next gift God has given us is the ability to open up the hearts of people to His healing power; The life changing Word of God: The scripture tell us,

***“it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe” (1 Corinthians 1:21b)***

But how can they believe if they don’t hear the word. God has given to us the gift of the ability to share the word under the anointing of the Spirit of God.

***“Who also hath made us able ministers of the New Testament: not of the letter (with man words), but of the spirit” (2 Corinthians 3:6).***

God has made us ministers, planting the life changing Word of God in their hearts. God has entrusted to us His Word; there is nothing greater in the world than to be called to minister the words of life. You have the ability to change lives with God's anointed word. As a vessel of God, He will flow through you to minister to others to bring hope to the hopeless, faith to the faithless, peace to the troubled, and joy to them in sorrow, "to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness" (Isaiah 61:3). You have the very life of God living in you. You have the ability to produce life or death with the words you speak:

***"Death and life are in the power of the tongue" (Proverbs 18: 21).***

You can bind up the wounded heart or wound the heart with the words you say. You can build up or tear down with your words. This is what God told Jeremiah also:

***"See, I have this day set thee over the nations and over the kingdoms, to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy, and to throw down, to build, and to plant" (Proverbs 18: 21).***

Remember you are a life giver the life of God flows from you to others. Let everything you do be seasoned with grace and patience. God has given us the awesome responsibility of spreading His Word; to teach others the truth found in His Word. In a world that is blinded to the truth, the only way their eyes can be opened is if someone can reach them with the gospel. God is still sending laborers into the fields to bring in the harvest:

***"The harvest truly is plenteous, but the laborers are few; pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that He will send forth laborers into his harvest" (Romans 10:14-15).***

To take the Word to the ends of the earth is a big responsibility, but God prepares us by giving us His power:

***"But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us" (2 Corinthians 4:7).***

One of the twelve apostles that Jesus used mightily was Peter. The scripture tells us that many laid their sick in the street, so Peter's shadow could fall upon them and be healed. If you look at this man and the

mistakes he made, no doubt you can relate to him; but in all of his mistakes Jesus spoke to him and told him something that set him apart from the others:

***“And I will give unto thee the keys of the Kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven” (Matthew 16:19).***

These keys of the Kingdom of God are God gift to us to unlock the power of God. So that his power may flow through us as a river of living water, it will flow out of our inward man. Jesus said,

***“out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water” (John 7:38b)***

Prepare yourself to receive the many gifts from God. The scriptures tell us:

***“Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask Him?” (Matthew 7:7-11).***

If you will work hard and be diligent God will reward you abundantly. Let God’s many gifts take you into an area of the Spirit where many have never been.

**SECTION # 5**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 22**  
**The Catching Away**

*“Unto Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in His own blood, and hath made us kings and priests unto God and His Father.”*  
*(Revelation 1:5-6)*

Heaven! Just the very mention of the name brings excitement and awe to our hearts. Why? Because heaven is the fulfillment of all longings, desires and dreams. It is the place the very deepest part of our hearts and soul hunger for and longs for. Even though we have never seen it we know it is the most beautiful place one could ever imagine. Why do we know this? For God’s Spirit teaches us. The bible tells us:

*“But as it is written, eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him. But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God” (1 Corinthians 2:9-10).*

God has revealed to us by his Spirit the deep things of God, things that the natural Man cannot understand. Heaven is a vast part of God’s kingdom, a place where Jehovah God, Jesus Christ, and the angels live. According to the Bible the righteous who have died in Christ abide there also. This is where God’s headquarters is. It is a place full of the glory of God, a place of absolute beauty and splendor. Where heaven is we do not exactly know. However, we know it has a real physical existence, but in the spirit world. We can only image what it is like from the limited information we have in the Bible. We are told in the Bible that in the beginning God created the heavens then the earth. So, heaven is foremost God’s supreme creation. Out of all that, God has provided for this people. Heaven will be the most wonderful gift God will give His people. In the Old Testament there are many types and shadows of heaven, and there are two types of heavens mentioned. First, the heavens. which means the sky,

firmaments, and stars, and then heaven, that is God's dwelling place. To begin with, the Bible tells us that God created the heavens. Then in the process of time it mentions how that from the heavens God flooded the earth. Then also in another place in the Bible we are told how God sent fire from heaven. These two examples are for the heaven or sky. Next, we have a record of the first man (Jacob) who saw an entrance into the spiritual heaven. He saw angels coming and going into heaven. Let us read the scriptures of this account:

***“And he dreamed, and behold a ladder set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending and descending” (Genesis 28:12).***

So, from the scriptures we learn heaven has an entrance, and from that entrance, angels leave and enter. However, remember angels are spirits and not flesh and blood like humans. Hence, the only way we can enter heaven is through the spirit:

***“Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption” (1st Corinthians 15:50).***

The first man that has ever entered heaven was Abel, whom Cain slew. The reason why he went to heaven was because God accepted his sacrifice, thus, God accepted him:

***“And in process of time it came to pass, that Cain brought of the fruit of the ground an offering unto the LORD. And Abel, he also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of the fat thereof. And the LORD had respect unto Abel and to his offering: But unto Cain and to his offering he had not respect. And Cain was very wroth, and his countenance fell. And the LORD said unto Cain, Why art thou wroth? and why is thy countenance fallen? If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him. And Cain talked with Abel his brother: and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother, and slew him” (Genesis 4:3-8).***

We can clearly see God respected Abel's sacrifice. When Cain slew Abel, God accepted Abel's spirit back into heaven.

And even though no doubt there may have been many others Enoch is the next one we clearly see who went to heaven. The Bible clearly states: ***“Enoch walked with God...”*** This man had such an intimate relationship with God that God himself came down and spent time with him. Enoch had something happened to him that set an example for all the heirs of salvation. He had such a close relationship with God that God took him home the scripture said.

***“...and he was not; for God took him” (Genesis 5:24).***

Again, Paul’s writing also states:

***“By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God” (Hebrews 11:5).***

This catching away of Enoch is a great example of the catching away of the saints in the last days. In the book of Jude, we read that Enoch himself saw this catching up of the saints. The book of Jude tells us:

***“And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints” (Jude 14).***

Enoch was a man of flesh and blood. Nonetheless, he was so close to God, he had the testimony that he pleased God. Therefore, God took him to heaven. Jesus Himself told His disciples:

***“Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in Me. In My Father’s house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there ye may be also” (John 14:1-3).***

It is clear in the scriptures that those who have endured and have kept the faith and are full of the Holy Ghost will be taken to this place prepared by Jesus. This is very clearly pointed out in the scriptures. Many preach and teach that all of God’s people will have to go through the Great Tribulation. However, this conflicts with the scriptures. Jesus said He would take us to be where He is, heaven. Paul the Apostle described how this would happen in two different places. Let us look at them:

***“For this we say unto you by the Word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent them which are asleep (dead)” (1 Thessalonians 4:15).***

The second description is similar:

***“Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep (be dead), but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed” (1 Corinthians 15:51-52).***

Looking at these two groups of scriptures I see several things. First, those who are alive are going to be changed in an instant and they will receive an incorruptible body. The scriptures say:

***“Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see him as He is” (1 John 3:2).***

When Christ comes, no longer will God’s people have a body of flesh and blood; but they will have a glorified body. In a twinkle of an eye those who are full of the Holy Ghost will be transformed to be like Jesus, and then they will be caught up in the air to be with those who have already died in Christ. Understand that the death of a child of God is only the beginning. We all have life’s course to run if we choose to serve God and stay true to Him and His Word. When we die, we will go to be with Him forever. Paul said:

***“We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord” (2 Corinthians 5:8).***

Even though we may not have all understanding or revelation concerning the coming of the Lord, we do know that it is impossible for God to lie. One thing is for sure, the time of the return of Christ is at hand. One might ask when Christ will come; Christ will only come after ever prophecy is fulfilled. We are to be prepared for his eminent return. We have been warned:

***“But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a***

*woman with child; and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief” (1 Thessalonians 5: 1-4).*

Through the scriptures I have pointed out to you the hope of God’s people that is going to be with our Savior forever. God has filled our hearts with this hope because this is His desire for His people; to provide a place of shelter from all evil. He desires to gather His people unto His bosom to care for and look after them. Jesus pointed this out when He revealed the heart of God. Standing looking over Jerusalem He declared:

***“O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not!” (Luke 13:34).***

Hear the heart of God as He cries out to His people; come to Me and be safe. God will fulfill His promise to His people in the future as he gathers His people to Himself. After this life ends then begins the glorious life of dwelling in God’s heavenly kingdom forever. The words I write in this book could never adequately describe heaven. However, we do have accounts of some who have seen or have been there.

After Jesus had ascended into heaven, the very first martyr for their faith was Stephen. It was well reported by people, that he was a man “full of faith and power” unbelievers “were not able to resist the wisdom and the Spirit by which he spoke.” Having brought him before the council they falsely accused him of speaking blasphemous words against the temple. As they looked upon him for his reply, his face was as an angel’s face. Stephen boldly gave a history lesson leading up to the construction of the temple, then declared:

***“Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet, Heaven is My throne, and earth is My footstool: what house will ye build Me? saith the Lord: or what is the place of My rest? Hath not My hand made all these things?” (Acts 7:48-50).***

They had accused him of speaking against that which was of little value to God. Stephen pointed out that which is held in high esteem among man is of little value to God, such as their temple. Little did they know



that God's actual temple is the heart of man. They had resisted the teaching of God and had held onto their man-made doctrine. Stephen told them:

***“Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye do always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do ye. Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the Just One; of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers: Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it” (Acts 7:51-53).***

After hearing these words, they were cut to the heart. Filled with rage they began to bite at him:

***“But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God” (Acts 7:55-56).***

This is a very tragic story of how man will resist the truth even to the point of displaying animalistic characteristics. After gnashing upon Stephen, they then stoned him to death. As Stephen was dying, he saw the heavens open with the Son of God standing to welcome him into glory. When we depart from this life we will go to be with Jesus, Paul learned this the hard way. He tells a story of one who went to heaven:

***“I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) such an one caught up to the third heaven. And I knew such a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter” (2 Corinthians 12:2-4).***

More than likely Paul was talking about himself when he was stoned at Lystra. He had gone into heaven but then came back. If you notice, Paul said that this man was caught up into heaven. We all have heard stories of people who have gone to heaven and come back again. All of them had similar stories of the beauty and splendor of this magnificent place.

John the Beloved, an apostle of Jesus Christ, was sentenced to exile on the island of Patmos for preaching the gospel. While he was there, God chose to give him a revelation of the last days. This revelation John received was recorded and now is known as the Book of Revelation of the Holy Bible. Through the revelation that God gave John we have a very good description of this wonderful place called heaven. Let us look at his vision:

*“After this I looked, and, behold, a door was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter. And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and One sat on the throne. And He that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald. And round about the throne were four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold. And out of the throne proceeded lightnings and thunderings and voices: and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God. And before the throne there was a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four beasts full of eyes before and behind. And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying eagle. And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, LORD God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come. And when those beasts give glory and honour and thanks to Him that sat on the throne, who liveth forever and ever, The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth forever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying, Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for Thou hast created all things, and for Thy pleasure they are and were created” (Revelation 4:1-11).*

These scriptures teach us a lot about heaven. First thing we see is that John was in the spirit. We also notice that every creature gives God glory, honor, praise, worship, and power, from the mightiest to the least. They know that everything exists because of God, and without God there is no life, for He created all things.

Through the scriptures we also see that heaven is a place where there is no confusion. Heaven is very well organized everything is precise and perfect. God is the King, and then everybody else is in their assigned position. Everything in heaven is continuously giving God glory. He will not share it with another. This is the way it will also be with us in heaven; we will join the host of multitudes giving God glory. Those who have this hope in their hearts are preparing themselves for the day when Jesus will return and take His people home. He will come for those who are longing and watching for His return. Those who are looking for His coming are allowing the Spirit to purge them of impurities. Because of our love for Christ, we are not rebellious against the Lord as he cleanses us with his precious blood. Often, he will correct us by chastising us. We accept his corrections because we know it is for our good, so that we can reach the perfection in Christ that God intends for us to have. As we yield to Him, His presence surrounds us, and His peace fills our hearts. The Spirit of God assures us that He has a place prepared for us and He will come and receive us unto Himself. By the Spirit of God, we are assured that we are acceptable unto God, as the Spirit of God bears witness with our spirits that we are the sons of God. We, as His bride, have adorned ourselves in fine linen which is the righteousness of God. We are continually washing ourselves in the blood of the Lamb. We are told by our Lord to:

***“Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh” (Matthew 25:13).***

***“Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man” (Luke 21:36).***

***“If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee” (Revelation 3:3).***

Christ will return and gather His elect, His bride from the four corners of the earth. Those who are in perfect harmony with God will be changed:

***“For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord” (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17).***

Once Christ has gathered His bride, He will then take us to a place of perfect peace. What a glorious time it will be when Christ and His bride sit down at the table of fellowship to partake of the marriage supper of the lamb:

***“Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to Him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints. And he saith unto me, write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And He saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God” (Revelation 19:7-9).***

Just before Jesus was crucified, He sat at a table in fellowship with His disciples. He told them:

***“With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer: For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it is fulfilled in the kingdom of God” (Luke 22:15-16).***

Then He also told them:

***“But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of the fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in My Father’s kingdom” (Matthew 26:29).***

What was Jesus trying to tell them? Wine was a part of the culture that Jesus lived in. It was used at celebrations, festivals, and weddings. The host and the guests would sit around and sum and fellowship with each other. What Jesus was saying was that He was not going to have another celebration, a wedding, or a festival until He comes to get His

people, His bride, and take them home with Him. Then we are going to have the biggest and best party you have ever seen.

When Christ comes, He will openly reveal Himself to His bride as we sit at the table of fellowship for a total of seven years.

To come to the truth as to when the saints will be raptured and taken to heaven, we must look at the canon of scriptures; we must look at the types and shadows in the scriptures. As I mentioned before, Enoch was the first example of God removing His saint before judgment came. The judgment I speak of is when God destroyed the earth by water. Then, of course, Noah was also spared because he found grace with God. Let us look at the scriptures:

*“And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the LORD that He had made man on the earth, and it grieved Him at His heart. And the LORD said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them. But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD. These are the generations of Noah: Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations, and Noah walked with God. And Noah begat three sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth. The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence. And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth. And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before Me; for the earth is filled with violence through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth. Make thee an ark of gopher wood; -----And, behold, I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; and everything that is in the earth shall die. But with thee will I establish my covenant; and thou shalt come into the ark, thou, and thy sons, and thy wife, and thy sons' wives with thee. And of every living thing of all flesh, two of every sort shalt thou bring into the ark, to keep them alive with thee; they shall be male and female. Of fowls after their kind, and of cattle after their kind, of every creeping thing of the earth*

*after his kind, two of every sort shall come unto thee, to keep them alive. And take thou unto thee of all food that is eaten, and thou shalt gather it to thee; and it shall be for food for thee, and for them. Thus did Noah; according to all that God commanded him, so did he. And the LORD said unto Noah, Come thou and all thy house into the ark; for thee have I seen righteous before Me in this generation” (Genesis 6:5-22, 7:1).*

When God passed judgment upon the earth because of the corruption, He spared Noah and his family because Noah was righteous. This also is a type and shadow of God protecting the righteous when destruction comes. When the earth was being destroyed by water, Noah and his family were safe in the ark. The scriptures tell us:

*“For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ, Who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with Him” (1 Thessalonians 5:9-10).*

When God’s wrath is poured out upon the earth during the Great Tribulation, God’s elect will be safe with Christ in heaven. This is also confirmed by the Apostle John, in his revelation to the church:

*“Because thou hast kept the word of My patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth” (Revelation 3:10).*

The next type of shadow given to us in the Bible is how God calls us out from where we are and carries us through the many hardships and trial of this life, to a land prepared for His people. Abraham was living in the land of Canaan, in the city of Haran, with his father Terah. This city of Haran was known for its worship of the moon God which some called Allah, which is the Arabian name for God. While Abraham was living in this city of Haran, God spoke to him telling him to leave that land and go to into another. Let us read the account in the Bible:

*“Now the LORD had said unto Abram, get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee*

*shall all families of the earth be blessed. So Abram departed, as the LORD had spoken unto him; and Lot went with him: and Abram was seventy and five years old when he departed out of Haran. And Abram took Sarai his wife, and Lot his brother's son, and all their substance that they had gathered, and the souls that they had gotten in Haran; and they went forth to go into the land of Canaan; and into the land of Canaan they came” (Genesis 12:1-5).*

Once Abraham obeyed God, leaving his home, God visited him many times choosing him to be the father of His people, whom He would birth through Abraham’s lineage. Abraham waited 25 year to see the beginning of the fulfillment of the promise God gave him. Abraham died only to see a partial fulfillment of the promises of God. However, in all of his life he never lost sight of the vision God gave him. Paul spoke on Abraham:

*“By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise: For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God. Through faith also Sarah herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged Him faithful who had promised. Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable. These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned. But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for He hath prepared for them a city” (Hebrews 11:8-16).*

God gave Abraham a vision of a country with a city, a city not made with human hands, not of this world but a heavenly one whose maker is God. Now we know that Abraham lived 4,000 years ago, therefore, we can assume that Abraham is in heaven now. I have shared with you just a very brief pattern of events that is in this story and will unfold for God's people in the very near future.

First, the example of Enoch; God's people will be taken up before judgment comes.

Second, the example of Noah; God's people will be safe when God pours out His judgment on the earth.

Third, God will take His people to a country He has prepared for them. These are just slight glimpses of all that is in store for God's people. There are other examples we find in the Old Testament. However, we want to turn our attention to the New Testament now. In the New Testament God's people are given even more insight into the mysteries of God's kingdom. Jesus, in His teaching, never did give a direct time reference to the catching away of the saints before the Great Tribulation. The reason why is because He did not know:

***“But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father” (Mark 13:32).***

This is where many have come to different conclusions as to when the Rapture will occur. Jesus himself could not tell us, because He did not know. The book that gives the greatest description of the last days is Matthew. When one reads the 24th and 25th chapters of Matthew, you must keep in mind these chapters cover many, many years of church history; and as with many prophecies, they telescope. Beginning with the destruction of Jerusalem, even to the present day and the future, and Jesus did not give these prophecies in that exact order. However, in these chapters we see several main themes; the rise of much deception, troubles on the earth, the persecution of the saints, that we have been warned, the catching away of the saints, the judgment of the Saints, the coming of the Lord with the Saints, and the judgment of all the inhabitants of the earth. We will look at all of them.

First, The increase of deception:



***“And Jesus answered and said to them: Take heed that no one deceives you. For many will come in My name, saying, I am the Christ, and will deceive many. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect” (Matthew 24:4-5,11,24).***

As Jesus addressed the questions asked by the disciples, “when shall these things be? And what shall be the sign of Thy coming, and of the end of the world?” He began by telling the disciples that in the last days before His return there would be much deception. Never has there been so many different religions, all claiming to be the way to eternal life. Many of them have deceived multitudes by their lying wonders. Of course, this is not new, when Moses went in before Pharaoh, as a sign that God had sent him, he laid his staff down and it turned into a snake and in return the magicians turned their staffs into snakes also; but Moses, staff/snake devoured the magicians, staff/snake. There is only one way to heaven, only one way to have eternal life, and that is through Jesus Christ.

Second, Much Trouble on the Earth:

***“And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come. When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains: Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take anything out of his house: Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! But pray ye that***

*your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day” (Matthew 24:6-8,12,14-20).*

We see this unfolding right before our eyes, never has there been so much unrest, floods, starvation, disease, natural disasters, earth-quakes, financial problems, and news of wars in the headlines everyday

Third, Persecution of the Saints:

*“Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken” (Matthew 24:9-10, 21-22,29).*

Some of these prophecies have already been fulfilled. In 70 A.D. Jerusalem was destroyed by the Romans. The temple was burned, and the city plummeted. In recent years we have seen the persecution of Christians in China, Africa, and other nations. Hatred and bitterness against Christians is on the increase in America, which was founded upon the principles of the Bible and has always been known as a Christian nation. They have taken the gospel to the ends of the earth; but now there is much contentment and evil in the hearts of many toward America. Persecution will continue to increase until Jesus comes back.

Fourth, We have been warned:

*“But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. Behold, I have told you before. Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh: So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors. Verily I say unto you, this generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but My words shall not pass away. But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.*

*Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh. Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; And shall begin to smite his fellowservants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh” (Matthew 24:13,25, 32-36,42-51 25:13).*

God always warns His people before destruction come. We see this pattern all through the Bible. God warned Noah, who also warned the people. The Bible tells us “Noah was a preacher of righteousness”. God warned Abraham of the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, who in turn interceded on behalf of the righteous in that city. God warned Jeremiah of the destruction of Jerusalem, but the people would not listen. Never before has the gospel been preached as now. For the last 100 years it has been proclaimed with power and authority. Across the airwaves, beamed into the home of countless multitudes, preached on the corners, parks, and prisons, God’s Word has reached around the globe. God has warned us, that Jesus will come back and if we are not ready, we will be left here to endure tribulation as such as never been seen before.

Fifth, Catching away of the Saints:

*“For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together. And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then*

*shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And He shall send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other. But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not” Matthew 24:27-28,30-31,37-41, 25:1-12).*

There has always been much interest as to when Jesus will come back. Scholars and many great Bible teachers have examined the scriptures for many years and have come up with many different views. I my-self am not a Bible scholar; I hold no degree of study. All I know is what the Holy Spirit has taught me. So, all I can do is relate to you my own personal experience.

In 1995 I spent some time in prayer and fasting seeking God for the answer as to rather Christ will come before or in the middle and at the end

of the tribulation. One day I was praying struggling in the Spirit, and there was great resistance to my prayers. Suddenly, I broke through, God's presence filled the room and spoke to me,

***“All who go up in the Rapture will come back with me riding white horses”.***

Now one thing I believe is that when God speaks to you it will always line up with scripture, and the scriptures tells us,

***“And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The word of God. And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: (Revelation 19: 11-15).***

I knew then, beyond a shadow of a doubt, Jesus would come back before the Great Tribulation. Then after the Great tribulation Jesus and the armies of heaven will come to his earth and conquer it. Therefore, I myself have always held to the pre-tribulation rapture of the saints.

Once God's bride is rapture, then will the Great Tribulation begin. In this time period; there will be no joyous celebration for the inhabitants of the earth, for that seven years will be the worst time period for man since his creation. God will unleash His wrath against sin and therefore against ungodly men. There will be great tribulation because the church and the Holy Ghost will be taken out of the earth and Lucifer will be loosed. Many will realize that they have missed the rapture, and their faith will be renewed in Christ Jesus. They will have to live and walk by faith, even as they did in the Old Testament. Many will die for Christ in those days, but then will be granted eternal life. As I write this book, I feel impressed by the Spirit of God that there are some who will be reading this book during the Great Tribulation. Hold on to your faith in God, endure unto the end and you will obtain eternal live. Be encouraged:

***“Weeping may endure for the night, but joy cometh in the morning.” (Psalm 30: 5b)***

There will be many that will hold on to their faith in God and endure the Great Tribulation:

***“Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand.” (Daniel 12:10)***

Lucifer will deceive many, but those who are wise will recognize this deception and will hold on to God. Many will be saved in the Great Tribulation:

***“After this I behold, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; these are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.” (Revelation 7:9,14b)***

During the seven years of the tribulation, God will begin to purge the earth of ungodly men, and even though men will be experiencing the wrath of God, they will still curse Him and not turn to Him. What a wonderful gift we have, the hope of heaven and eternal life God has given us.

**SECTION # 5**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 23**  
**The Second Return of Christ**

*“And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and He that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He doth judge and make war.” (Revelation 19:11)*

In Clouds of Glory!! He shall come with the armies of heaven in great power and authority and every eye shall see Him. The next event in the chain of events we will look at is the second return of Christ. Jesus spoke much of this return back to earth as a conquering King. On the night he was crucified when the high priest asked,

*“Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed? And Jesus said, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven” (Mark 14:61b-62).*

After the Great Tribulation Christ will return and will set up His reign upon the earth. This is what is known as the Millennium Reign. Christ will come with the army of heaven and conquer the earth. When Jesus returns the second time, every eye shall see Him as He descends upon the earth, and His armies shall fill the eastern sky:

*“And then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory” (Matthew 24:30b).*

What a sad day that will be for those who have rejected. When ungodly men shall see Him coming, they will run to the mountains to hide in the caves and dens of the earth. Just as Adam and Eve did, they will realize that they are naked and have no covering for their sins. They will be exposed and vulnerable. They will try to hide their shame and their guilt, but they will see there is no place to hide from His face; so they will cry out:

***“And said to the mountains and rocks, fall on us, and hide us from the face of Him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb” (Revelation 6:16).***

The armies of the world will gather to war with the lamb, but the Son of man will not come back as a meek, timid lamb. He will return as a roaring lion. He will return as the lion of Judah to execute judgment on wicked man. As He descends, those who were caught up in the rapture and those who are in who on into Glory by the way of death will come back with Him. We will descend with our King riding white horses to conquer and rid the earth of everything that defiles the world:

***“And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it He should smite the nations” (Revelation 19:15a).***

The sword that is spoken of here is the Word of God, Christ will issue the command to his soldiers to go and conquer the earth. The slain of the Lord shall be many. Then God's angels shall call to the fowls of the earth:

***“Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God; That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great” (Revelation 19; 17b-18).***

Then a strong angel will descend from heaven and will lay hold upon Lucifer and bind him with a great chain and cast him into the bottomless pit. The beast (antichrist) and the false prophets will be captured and cast into hell alive. Christ will proceed to the temple in Jerusalem, (this temple does not exist at this time however it will be built in the very near future) and He will take His rightful place as King and High Priest on the seat of David. He will then rule the nations of the world with a rod of iron. Christ will reign a thousand years on the seat of David as He purifies and purges the world of sin, iniquities, and all things that defile man. Many, of God's elect will be given thrones to sit upon and power will be given to them to judge. In this thousand-year reign of Christ, Christ will judge His people:



***“For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he done, whether it be good or bad” (2nd Corinthians 5:10).***

We will be rewarded for the work that we have done out of love with a pure motive in our hearts to glorify God. Works we have done to exalt ourselves, will be burned up. Rewards and crowns will be handed out to His people. Christ will then give every one of His people a position in His kingdom. Some will rule and reign and some will serve, depending on how faithful each one was to God:

***“And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the Word of God, and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years” (Revelations 20:4).***

After the thousand years, Lucifer will once again be loose upon the earth, and he will be given power to deceive man again. This will be God trying His people to see whose hearts are completely true to Him. God tries the reins of man’s hearts to see which way they will go. Lucifer will go forth and deceive the nations, and then the devil and the nations that he deceives will rise against the Lamb. They will assemble and come against the holy city of Jerusalem and encamp around it to destroy it. But God will fight against those who have allowed the devil to deceive them, and God will rain down fire from heaven and destroy these men. Those whose hearts are pure and holy before God and the Lamb, will be secure in Him. Then once and for all Lucifer will be cast into hell, and will deceive no more:

***“And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night forever and ever” (Revelation 20:10).***

After this every man great or small who has not been judged will stand before God:

***“And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God: and the books were opened: and another book were opened, which***

***is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire” (Revelation 20:10-12, 15).***

God will judge everyone who has ever lived and died. Every man and woman who is in the grave, hell, or death, will be delivered up before the judgment seat. As God sits upon His throne, mankind will give account for all their deeds. After the people’s lives have been reviewed, the Book of Life will be opened, and if their names are not written in there, they will be cast into the lake of fire forever:

***“And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire” (Revelation 20:15).***

My friends, as you read this book, know for sure that you will give account for everything you do:

***“For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested; neither was anything kept secret, but that it should come abroad” (Mark 4:22).***

Three times Christ will gather His people unto Himself.

1). He will gather His bride at the Rapture, and His people shall meet the dead in Christ in the air. These will reign with Christ, and this will include those who gave their lives for the witness of Jesus Christ and for the Word of God. They will be clothed in fine linen, which is the righteousness of the saints. Their positions will vary from kings and priests to judges in different areas of God’s kingdom. These positions will be determined by how much of their works are left after those works are tried with fire.

2). Those who have gone through the Great Tribulation will be gathered. They were not ready when Christ came after His bride. Therefore, they had endured great tribulation and walked by faith. At the end of the Great Tribulation, Christ will send His angels and gather them from the four corners of the earth. They will be clothed in the garment of salvation. They will be servants unto God:

3). Then 3<sup>rd</sup> time in be when God gathers humanity to stand before the great white throne judgement. those who comes out of the sea, death,

and hell whose names are in the Book of Life will be granted entry into God's kingdom.

**SECTION # 5**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 24**  
**New Heaven and New Earth**

*“And He that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new.  
And He said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful.”  
(Revelation 21:5)*

As a Bride Adorned!! This is how John described the city of God, the place prepared for His people, after the Millennium Reign of Christ here on earth. Every wicked invention of man will be consumed. Peter told us:

*“But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness, Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat? Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness”  
(2 Peter 3:10-13).*

The heavens and earth will be thoroughly purged with fire from everything that is corrupt and defiled because of Lucifer and the fall of Adam. God is going to change everything. In the beginning everything was perfect, except for one thing, Lucifer; but Lucifer will be no more. Once God has purged and purified everything, everything will be made new. Everything will be in perfect harmony once again. All of creation, creatures, and man, will be in perfect harmony with God. Everything will become pure and clean the way God intended it to be. This will not be the first time God has cleansed the earth. Even though it is not mentioned in the Bible, science has proven there was a time when dinosaurs walked the earth, how-ever there came a great freeze which destroyed them all, and

then also the great flood which killed every living thing except for what was preserved in the ark. The next time God will cleanse the earth with fire. Then God's Holy City will descend from heaven. God will then openly reveal Himself to His people and dwell with them:

***“And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I, John saw the holy city, a new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away” (Revelation 21:1-4).***

This new Jerusalem is the very place Jesus spoke of when He said:

***“In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also” (John 14:2-3).***

This new Jerusalem will be God's gift to his people. It will be more beautiful than anyone could ever image. It will be full of the Radiant Glory of God. It will descend from heaven as a bride prepared for her groom:

***“And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass. And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald; The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst. And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass” (Revelation 21:18-21).***

God Himself will sit upon the throne. We as God's people will have access to God and the Lamb:

***“And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it. And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob; and He will teach us of His ways: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem. And He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more” (Isaiah 2:2-4).***

There will be peace, joy, and love as we dwell on the earth in perfect harmony with nature, creation, and with God. Earth will be full of life and there will be no death. There will be no more war and there will be perfect peace on the earth. We will be one with God. Everything will be provided for us as God intended. This is the way it was meant to be from the very beginning when God first created Adam and Eve before sin entered the world. Out of the city God the New Jerusalem will flow a pure river of the water of life, clear as crystal, flowing out to God's people. On the sides of the river will be the trees of life. Remember this tree was in the garden of Eden and after man sinned God drove him out,

***“---lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever” (Genesis 3:22b).***

The leaves from the tree will be given to the nations, and healing will be in its leaves. So, from what the scriptures said the fruit itself will cause one to live forever. What a glorious future God has in store for his people, God and the Lamb will sit on Their thrones and we shall behold Their faces. God's name will be written on our foreheads. We will forever be with God and the Lamb.

**SECTION # 5**  
**BASICS OF CHRISTIANITY**  
**LESSON # 25**  
**HELL**

***“The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of His kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.” (Matthew 13:41-42)***

I am tormented in this flame!!! These words give us a reality check, that hell is real. Some would say no, but if it is impossible for God to lie, then why would He put this lie in His Word? This next section concerns a subject of great controversy; that is the existence of hell. Some would say this place does not exist; but why would God teach a lie? No, He would not and just because some ignore the existence of hell does not make it nonexistent. I have to ask the question, how can God be a just God if He only rewards those who live upright before Him, and turns around and does not demand payment for evil? The scriptures tell us:

***“Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap” (Galatians 6:7).***

Why should anyone live a good-godly life if we will not be judged for our evil deeds? We see how God dealt with the sinful rebellion of Lucifer, and the fact that he has offered to every man salvation. If one chooses to reject His love and forgiveness, He will deal with them seriously. Even nature itself teaches us there is good and evil, and there is always payment for the evil we commit. We have been clearly taught in God’s Word that we will be rewarded for our works, good or bad:

***“For the Son of man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels; and then He shall reward every man according to his works” (Matthew 16:27).***

The only way we will not receive payment for sins is if we have asked for forgiveness from Jesus Christ Who paid the penalty for our sins. Why would Jesus give his life and take the penalty and wrath of God for

sin if there was no payment for sin, if there would be no recompense?

There is a very real hell and those who reject God's love will be turned into it. Jesus mentioned hell many times in His teachings. However, out of them all there is one that stands out. This one describes its torments. Let us read this vivid account:

*“There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us that would come from thence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead” (Luke 16:19-31).*

If you notice in the story it speaks about two men, one rich, the other a beggar. Now it is not a sin to have money, but if you noticed the rich man showed no compassion to the beggar. The beggar was so hungry he desired the crumbs from the rich man's table and the fact the scripture states he desired them implies he did not receive them. This rich man



would not even give him the crumbs off his table. The only compassion the beggar received was from the dog that licked his sores. As fate would have it they both died. The beggar was carried to paradise, the rich man was turned into hell. In hell he lifted up his eyes and saw the beggar in Abraham's bosom. Now, the rich man was the beggar and the beggar was rich. The rich man was now in torment. His torment was so intense that he desired the beggar to show him mercy and bring him one drop of water to cool his tongue. Hell is a very real place and multitudes will be turned into it. Isaiah the prophet who saw God in all His glory and power had a very clear revelation of hell. Listen to his words:

*“Therefore my people are gone into captivity, because they have no knowledge: and their honourable men are famished, and their multitude dried up with thirst. Therefore hell hath enlarged herself, and opened her mouth without measure: and their glory, and their multitude, and their pomp, and he that rejoiceth, shall descend into it. And the mean man shall be brought down, and the mighty man shall be humbled, and the eyes of the lofty shall be humbled: But the LORD of hosts shall be exalted in judgment, and God that is holy shall be sanctified in righteousness. Then shall the lambs feed after their manner, and the waste places of the fat ones shall strangers eat. Woe unto them that draw iniquity with cords of vanity, and sin as it were with a cart rope: That say, Let him make speed, and hasten his work, that we may see it: and let the counsel of the Holy One of Israel draw nigh and come, that we may know it! Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight! Woe unto them that are mighty to drink wine, and men of strength to mingle strong drink: Which justify the wicked for reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him! Therefore as the fire devoureth the stubble, and the flame consumeth the chaff, so their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust: because they have cast away the law of the LORD of hosts, and despised the Word of the Holy One of Israel”* (Isaiah 5:13-24).

As you can see the list is long and extensive of those who will be turned into hell. Even so much, hell has enlarged herself to receive the multitudes. Jesus Himself said:

***“Enter ye in at the straight gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in there at” (Matthew 7:13).***

Now these are the words of Christ, many will go there. If one chooses to reject God’s “salvation” they will perish. Paul gives us an extensive list of those who will be turned into hell:

***“Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God” (Galatians 5:19-21).***

John, the Apostle while a prisoner on the isle of Patmos for preaching the Word of God, and for his testimony of Jesus Christ also received a revelation concerning who will be turned into hell:

***“He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be His God, and he shall be My son. But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death” (Revelation 21:7-8).***

So, we can see why hell has enlarged herself. Multitudes have rejected God’s salvation, choosing to serve the creature over the creator. However, there will be one ultimate test as to whether one will be cast into hell; we find this in Revelation also:

***“And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire” (Revelation 20:15).***

God has a book, call it what you will, Book of Life or Lamb’s Book of Life, if your name is not in it, you will be cast into hell and the only way to get your name in it is to accept Jesus Christ as your Lord and

Savior. There is also indication in god's word there will be different degrees of sufferings.

***“And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.”***

***(Luke 12:47-48)***

As with every other part of God's Kingdom, Hell also has different sections, levels, and degrees of punishment and sufferings. Even though we do not know them in exact details, we can learn some from God's Word concerning different degrees of suffering. In the Old Testament David mentioned:

***“For great is Thy mercy toward me: and thou hast delivered my soul from the lowest hell” (Psalms 86:13).***

Apparently, David had some revelation concerning the fact there are different areas of hell. He stated from the lowest hell, so if there is a lower part of hell, then there must be a middle and higher part. We do know the Bible mentions different areas. Jonah mentioned he was in the belly of hell. Jesus pointed this out in His teachings:

***“And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For***

***unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more” (Luke 12:42-48).***

These words of Christ tell us there will be different degrees of punishment. Those who have never been taught the truth will not receive as severe a punishment as those who know the truth. Understand, every man has knowledge of God, as I explained earlier. Because of this and the fact that the salvation of Christ is available to all men, they are without excuse. The Bible tells us:

***“Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent” (Acts 17:29-30).***

If you notice the scripture says that God winked at their ignorance not their sins. One might say that if they didn't know any better then why would they be punished at all. When they knew not the truth, God understood this and then brought the truth to man through Jesus Christ, therefore we have no more excuses. Therefore, we are commanded to repent. Understand that they who know the truth and do it not, will be severely punished. This should give us a rude awaking as to the accountability required out of those whom God has called and anointed. Peter tells us:

***“For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire” (Peter 2:20-22).***

So, it is better to have never been taught the truth, than to have learned and then rejected it. In another place it says it is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of an angry God. In conclusion, I want you to

understand that the love of God is available to all mankind; He has made available to them His salvation. You don't have to perish, you don't have to spend eternity in hell fire, but you can have everlasting life, if you will hold to the many gifts God has available to you, apply them to your life you can spending eternity in God's presence forever!!

